

Liber THE BIBLIOPHILE

# LIFE

*Edin. AND Burgesside*

# ACTS

OF THE

## Most famous and valiant CHAMPION,

## Sir William Wallace,

Knight of Ellerstie;

# MAINTAINER OF THE LIBERTY OF

## *SCOTLAND.*

*With a PREFACE containing a short  
summe of the History of that time.*

~~A.A.B.C. 39.~~

# EDINBURGH,

Printed by ANDRO ANDERSON

Anno Dom. 1666.

Donatus sum Bibliothecar.  
Edinburgh  
et Magisterij Candidatus  
A. D. Dom  
1659.



THE  
P R I N T E R  
TO THE  
R E A D E R.



His History of Sir William Wallace,  
with the other of the valiant King  
Robert Bruce, which followeth up-  
on the end of it (the former wr-  
itten in Latine by Master John  
Blair, Chaplain to Wallace, and  
turned into Scots Meeter by one  
called Blind Harry, in the dayes  
of King James, the fourth: the  
other written by Master John  
Barber Arch-dean of Aberdene,

learned man in the dayes of King David Bruce, and Robert  
Stewart) contain the Relation of the most famous war that  
ever fell out in the Isle of Britain, foughten most valiantly  
for the space of fourty years, betwixt the two Realms of  
Scotland and England, the one unjustly pursuing the other,  
constantly defending the Liberties of this Countrey. During  
which broils, there happened great alterations, both in the  
general State of this Kingdom, and in the overthrow and  
vancement of particular Families; the one for betraying,  
the other for maintaining their Countries freedom and  
welfare.

That the whole History may be the more clear, we have  
thought good in a short Preface, to set down the causes, occ-  
asions, and the most memorable passages of this war. In  
Year, 1285. Alexander the third, King of Scotland, be-  
pitifully taken away by a fall off his horse at Kinghorn,  
without any issue of his body, and in him the whole posterity  
of his father Alexander the second, and Grand-father  
William the Lyon being extincte, the right of the Crown fell  
to the heirs of David Earl of Huntingdon and Garioch, young-

## The Printer to the Reader

Scended of Ada youngest daughter to Prince David of Huntingtown.

Having thus prepared maters, he came to Barwick, and met with the States of Scotland, to whom he promised to decide the controverse according to equity; which that it might seem more likely, he had brought from France sundry of the most famous Lawyers of that age: he choosed also out of the States of Scotland, assembled twelve of the wisest and most honourable, to whom he joined the like number of English, as Assessors to him in this arbitrement. At this meeting, by the doubtfull answer of the Lawyers, and number of new pretenders, he made the matter more difficult, and appointed a new convention at Norham in the borders, the year following.

Difficulties thus increasing, and the Earl of Holland having on foot a great army to take the Crown of Scotland by force (which their own Stories affirm to have landed in Scotland, and to have intercepted some strengths) At the meeting of Norham, King Edward dealt secretly, and by fit Agents with the States of Scotland, for eschewing of imminent mischiefs, to become his subjects: he being descended of King Davids sister, and so but two degrees further from the Crown of Scotland, than Bruce and Balliol were. This being flatly by all, he beook himself to his other design. And first dealt secretly with Robert Bruce, promising to decern in his favour if he would take the Crown of Scotland holden of him, and do him homage for it. But he stoutly refused to subject free Nation to any over-Lord: whereupon King Edward called for John Balliol, who knowing that he was not so much favoured of the States of Scotland, easily condescended to King Edwards desire: and being by him declared King of Scotland, the States desirous of peace, conveyed him to Scotland where he was crowned, Anno 1291. and all, except Bruce, swore to him obedience; shortly thereafter Duncan Mackdouall Earl of Fife, was killed by the Lord Abernethy (a man of great power in those times, allied both with the Cumming and Balliol:) the Earls brother finding the King partial in administration of Justice, summoned him to compear before the King of England in Parliament: where he being present, and sitting beside King Edward (after he had don his

## The Printer to the Reader.

him homage) when he was called upon, thought to answer by a Procuror: but he was forced to rise, and stand at the Bar. This Indignity grieved him greatly, he resolved to free himself of this bondage. At the same time war breaking out betwixt England and France, King Edward sent Ambassadors to the Parliament of Scotland, to send alde to him, as now being their over-Lord. There came also other Ambassadors from France desiring the ancient League to be renewed. The King and States of Scotland renewed the League with France which had remained inviolably kept for the space of five hundred years before. The King of Englands suite was rejected; because the pretended surrender and homage was made by John Balliol privately, without consent of the Parliament. A marriage also was concluded betwixt Prince Edward Balliol, and a daughter of Charles Earl of Valois, brother to the French King Philip. Edward having fore-seen all these things, had drawn Robert Bruce Earl of Carrick, with his friends, enemies to Balliol, and diverse noble-men of Scotland, who held lands of him in England, to bring such forces as they could make, to assist him in the French war: but withall taking truce with the French for some moneths, he suddenly turned his forces, destinate against France, toward Scotland. His Navy was vanquished at Barwick, and eighteen of his ships taken. Yet his land Host by the means of the Brucian faction, and the Englized Scots Noblemen, took the town of Barwick with great slaughter, and shortly thereafter, Dumbar, Edinburgh, & Striviling. In and about these Castles, he had killed or taken captives the greatest part of the Scots Noble men: so that crossing Forth, the blow being so sudden, he found no preparation for resistance. Balliol rendred himself to King Edward at Montrose, and was sent by sea into England, where he remained captive, til such time as by intercession of the Pope he was set at liberty, swearing and giving hostages never to return into Scotland. King Edward came to Scone, and took upon him the Crown of Scotland, as forfeited by the rebellion of his homager Balliol. He sent for the Nobles of Scotland who remained, that they with such as were his captives, might swear homage to him, as their Lledge Lord and King. Those who refused, were detained Prisoners.

King Edward thinking that now all was sure for him in

## The Printer to the Reader

Scotland, left John Plantagenet (some call him *Warren*) Earl of Surrey, and Sir Hew Cressingham Thesaurer, and returned to prosecute the French war, taking such of the Nobility of Scotland as he feared, along with him, with their followers. The great men of Scotland being in this manner either Imprisoned by King Edward, or sworn to his obedience, and ayed thereto by reason of their lands holden of the Crown of England, the rest either fled into the Isles and Highlands, or thought it sufficient to defend their own while better times.

But while men of power neglected the publick cause of the liberty of Scotland, William Wallace a youth of honourable birth, being son to Malcome Wallace of Ellerslie, but of mean power, having first in private killed many Englishmen of the garrisons as he could overtake them; by these exploits he became so Incouraged, being a man of invincible hardinesse, incredible strength of body, and whilall very wise and circumspect, that he gathered his friends and neighbours, and by jeopardies and stratagems, diverse times cut off great numbers of the enemies. The report thereof drew to him such as affected the liberty and welfare of their Countrey, and had courage to hazard themselves for vindicating thereof. Amongst them were the Earl Malcome Lennox, the Lord William Douglas (who had been taken captive at the winning of Barwick whereof he was made Captain, and sent home upon assurance) Sir John Graham, Sir Neil Campbell, Sir Christopher Setoun, Sir John Ramsay, Sir Fergus Barclay, Andrew Murray, William Oliphant, Hew Hay, Robert Boyd, John Johnston, Adam Gordon, Robert Keith, Reinald Crawford younger, Adam Wallace, Roger Kilpatrick, Simon and Alexander Fraser, Iame Crawford, Robert Lawder, Scrimgeour, Alexander Auchinleck Ruthven, Richard Luntie, William Crawford, Arthur Bissett, James and Robert Lindsey, John Cleland, William Ker, Edward Little, Robert Rutherford, Thomas Haliday, John Tinto, Walter Newbigging, Jardan Barde, Gubrie, Adam Currie, Hew Dunfus, John Scot, Seiven Ireland, Master John Blair, Master Thomas Gray, and other Gentlemen, with their friends and servants; who (after some valiant exploits happily achieved and an army of ten thousand men led by Thomas Earl of Lancasther, to assist the Earl of Warren, defeat by Wallace at Bignor) holding an Assembly at the Forrest Kirk, choosed Wallace

## The Printer to the Reader.

to be Warden of Scotland, and Vice-Roy in Belliol's absence. In which Office he so valiantly behaved himself, that in a short space he recovered all the strengths on the borders, and brought the South parts of Scotland to great quiet.

The English fearing the losse of all, subtilly took truce with Wallace for one year, beginning in February. In June following they proclaimed a Justice-ale to be holden at Glasgow and Aire the eighteenth of that moneth : thinking to entrap Wallace, and all his freinds, and under colour of law to cut them off the day appointed. All the landed men, according to the Custom assembling to this Court, the Englishmen condemned them of felony, and hanged them presently : among the rest Sir Reinald Crawford Sheriff of Aire, Uncle to Wallace, Sir Brice Blair, Sir Neil Montgomery, and many of the Barrons of Kyle, Cunygburn, Carrick, and Cliddisdaile. These that escaped by flight avenged Wallace, who chanced to come latter then the rest. He assembling such of the Country, as detecting so horrible a fact, extreameley hated the authors thereof, in the beginning of the night secretly entered into Aire, set fire in the place, where the Englishmen after that fact were securely sleeping, and suffered none to escape. The Garrison of the Castle siling forth to quench the fire, an ambusl laid for the purpose, entered the house and made it sure. The next morning Wallace came to Glasgow where the Lord Henry Percy had retired from Aire the day before whom he expulsid thence with great slaughter. This victory so hotly pursued, that immediately thereafter he took the Castle of Striviling, recovered Argyle and Lorn with the town of Saint Johnstoun, and the Country above ; thence he travelled through Angus and Merns, taking in all the strengths until he came to Aberdeen, which he found forsaken of the English, who had fled by sea, with the Lord Henry Beaumont, an English Lord, who had married one of the Heires of the Earldome of Buchan, named Camine. Thus all the North Country was reduced to the obedience of Wallace except the Castle of Dundie. While Wallace lay at the siege hereof, news came of the approach of the English army, led by John Earl of Warren and Surrey, and Sir Hugh Creffingham, with a great number of Northumbers, and such of the Scots as held with England.

## The Printer to the Reader.

to the number of thirty thousand. Wallace ( having with him ten thousand men hardned in arms ) met them beside Striving on the north side of Forth, which having no foords at that place, was passible only by a wooden bridge. This Wallace of purpose had caused to be weakened, so that the one half of the Host being past ( led by Cressingham ) the bridge broke with the great weight of their baggage. These who were come over, Wallace charged suddenly before they were put in order, and cut the most part of them in pieces with their Leader Cressingham: the rest seeking to escape, drowned in the water. The Earl of Warran with these who escaped, was assailed by Earle Malcome Lennox Captain of Striving Castle, and being hotly pursued by Wallace, hardly escaped himself, flying into Dumbar, a Castle then belonging to Patrick Earl of March. In this battel foughten the thirteenth of September, 1297. there perished no Scott men of remark, but Andrew Murray of Bothwel: The English Carlons hearing of this discomfiture, fled from all places, so that before the last of September all the strengths of Scotland was recovered except Berwick and Roxburgh,

After these victories, Wallace held a Parliament in Saint Johnstoun, as Warden of Scotland, and sealeed the whole Countrey, causing the Nobility to swear to be faithful to the State, till such time as they might condescend who should be King: Earl Patrick Dumbar refusing to acknowledge the authority of this Parliament, was chased out of Scotland and because the years by past the ground had not been manured, and great famine threatned the land, Wallace assembled a great Host and entred in England, where he remained all the Winter, and Spring following, living upon the enemies, and enriching his souldiers by their spoil: During which time the English durst never encounter him in open field: onely at his first entry, King Edward with a great army of raw souldiers came against him in the plain of St. Mure: but perceiving the discipline and hardy resolution of Wallace Host before they came nearer then halfe a myle, drew back his army, and retired: Wallace for fear of ambush kept his souldiers in order, and pursued them not. Thus King Edward left his Country to the mercy of a provoked enemy, & notwithstanding that he promised battle yet, kept

## The Printer to the Reader:

himself close, till a peace was concluded for five years, Berwick and Roxburgh being rendred to the Scots.

Scotland thus enjoying perfite liberty, Wallace being earnestly requested by the French King, to the end that his special Captains might be kept in military exercise during the peace, sailed over into France, with fifty valiant men in his company. He was encountered on the way by Thomas of Chartres (commonly called Thomas of Longueville) who with xteen sail infested the seas: but boording Wallace ship, he was taken by him, and thereafter fought most gallantly under him and King Robert Bruce, for the liberty of Scotland. Wallace after his landing in France, was imployed in war against the English, who at that time possessed the Dutchie of Guyen and Bourdeous: them he defeat in sundry skirmishes. But in few dayes he was called home by his friends in Scotland: for King Edward understanding Wallace absence, and regarding that he had broken the Peace in Guyen, dealt with Robert Bruce Earl of Carrick, and his freinds, and with such Noble-men of Scotland as held lands in England, or envied Wallace glory, showing that it was a shame for them to suffer Wallace, a mean Gentle-man to rule Scotland, while so much blood Royal did remain; so promising his assistance to Robert Bruce he sent a gret army into Scotland and by the help of the Brucian faction and Englyzed Noble-men easily obtained the greatest strengths of Scotland. Wallace turned the next Summer, secretly amissing a number of his special followers, who had lurked till his back coming, on sudden surprized Saint Johnstown by a stratagem: and pering his victory hotly, chased the English out of Fife. Upon report hereof, all the rest of his followers came from their lurking holes, by whose assistance he recovered diverse strengths. The Lord William Douglas took the Castle of Inquhar by a Stratagem, and finding the English Captains the nearest garrisons to come to besiege him, he sent secretly to Wallace, who coming with his power, not only raised the siegge, but chased also the whole English Garrison out of these quarters. From thence he came to the North parts, which he recovered with small diffi-  
culty, except the strong Castle of Dundis, to which he  
had a siegge.

The

## The Painter to the Readers

The King of England grieved at this fortunate successe of  
Wallace, and understanding that he was highly envied by  
the Earl of March, the Cumines (the greatest surname then  
in Scotland) and divers ancient Noblemen (to whose ho-  
nour Wallace renown seemed to derogate), he stirred up  
Robert Bruce elder, and his faction, persuading them that  
Wallace was Bruce's only Competitor for the Crown.  
Having so made a strong party for himself in Scotland, the  
next Spring he came with an army of fourty thousand men  
Scots and English to the Fawkirk, six myles beneath Strivi-  
ling. The Scots army was very great (being thirty thousand  
strang) if they had been all of one mind. For John Cumine  
Lord of Cumbernauld (who had an eye to the Crown) had  
perswaded the Lord John Stewart of Bute, being tutor and  
grand-father by the Mother to the Children of the late  
James Stewart of Ransfrow (lately deceased) to contend with  
Wallace for the leading of the vanguard, alleadging the same had  
belonged to the Lord Stewarts house by ancient privilege. When  
Wallace refusing this, they parted one from another in a  
high chaff, there remaining with Wallace no more but ten  
thousand of his old souldiers. Cumine with ten thousand of such  
his followers, after a smal shew of resistance, fled treason-  
ably, leaving the valiant Stewart inclosed by two battels of  
the English, by whom (after he had foughten valiantly for  
long time) he was cut off with all his followers. Wallace with  
his battel defended themselves valiantly, untill the English  
were safely retired beyond the river of Carron, losing (but of the  
side some others) the noble Sir John Graham the most val-  
iant Worthy of Scotland next unto Wallace : Bruce (whose King  
the King of England had brought with all his friends to the  
field, pretending to assit him for recovery of his right, from the  
the usurper Wallace) perceiving Wallace on the other side  
of Carron, desired to speak with him, to whom he upbraide  
so foolish an usurpation of the Kingdom of Scotland, agayn  
so powerful a nation at home; assited by so mighty  
King abroad. I (answered Wallace) intended never  
resign in Scotland : But finding my native Countrey aban-  
doned by you and Balliol who have the right to the Crown  
have let myself to defend my friends and neighbours from  
the unjust tyranny and usurpation of the King of England.

## The Printer to the Reader.

of who setteth you forth most unnaturally to tear the bowels  
by your mother with your own hands. After diverse speeches  
had to this purpose, the Bruce perceiving the fraudfull and  
honestyounous dealing of King Edward, returned to the Host.  
The next morning Wallace understanding that the English  
army weakly entrenched, and in great security, amassing with-  
in his own Army such as had escaped, set upon them in the  
dawning before they could be arrayed, and killed many. So  
that the English King returned at that time without any fur-  
ther exploit. Bruce (remembeling what he heard of Wal-  
lace) desired King Edward according to his former promises  
to put him in possession of so much of the Kingdom of Scot-  
land as then was under his power, to whom he answered in  
the French tongue, Have we no more ado, but conquer  
Kingdoms for you? By this speech the Lord Bruce concil-  
iated to great grief and anger, that within few days he depart-  
ed this life without seeing his eldest son Robert Bruce (af-  
terward King) being kept (for assurance of his fathers obe-  
dience) in Calice Castle in France.

After this unhappy battel, Wallace striving to recover  
such Castles and strengths, as King Edward had intercepted;  
found such opposition and backwardnesse by his envious  
emulators, that he returned to Saint Johnboun, and in an  
assembly of the States resigned his charge of Warden, and  
Wallace with eighteen men passed again into France, according to a  
promise at his last return thererfrom: This fell out in the end  
(but) of the year, 1300. The opposite faction having gained their  
desire, chooled John Cumine Gouvernour: the rather because  
King Edward had promised to assist him to the Crown of  
Scotland. But he found him as great an enemy as he had  
been to Wallace. For after seven moneths truce (obtained  
by means of the French King) Edward sent Sir Ralph Gon-  
rald Gray with a great army to subdue the Scots, and to put an  
end to the war: which they expected should be easie, Wal-  
lace being now out of the way, John Cumine joyning with  
the Lord Simon Fraser, making some eight or nine thousand  
men, came to resist the English, who having walked the  
Country as far as Rosling, (about five miles from Edin-  
burgh), expecting no resistance, divided themselves into three  
parties, that they might spoil farther in the Country. The

## The Printer to the Reader.

Scots embracing the occasion, set upon the first battel, and easily discomfite them : the second also ( albeit stronger by the joining of those who had fled ) was after a long conflict put to the rout. By this the third battel coming to the revenge, put the Scots to a great strait, as being sore wounded, wearied, and weakned in the two former battels, and having to withstand a fresh enemy of far greater number : hereupon they were forced to kill all the captives ( lest they should assist the enemy) and with their weapons to arm their Baggage-men : and setting forward both with courage and necessity ( seeing no escape ) after a long and hard fight, they put their enemies to flight. This wasthe 24 of March 1302.

King Edward sore incensed by this evil successe, sent for Robert Bruce younger out of Calice : whom he perswaded, that he had for a long time against Wallace defended his fathers right to the Crown of Scotland, that having put Wallace out of the way, he found the Cummings as great enemies : notwithstanding he intended yet once more to put that enemy out of the way, and to settle him in his Kingdom. The young Prince believing him, caused all his friends and favourers of Scotland to joun with him, and entring the borders, spoiled the Countrey, and took diverse Castles as far as Dowglas. Some report that the Lady Dowglas ( named Ferras an English woman ) betrayed that Castle to the Bruce, who took the Lord William Dowglas captive with all his children and goods. The Lord himself was kept prisoner in Berwick and thereafter in York, while he dyed. Mean time King Edward had prepared a mighty army both by land and sea : with which he entered Scotland, and subdued all before him, while he came to Striveling, keeped then by sir William Oliphant ; who after a long hedge, knowing of no re lief, yeelded the Castle upon condition, that himself and all that were with him should passe with their lives safe : notwithstanding King Edward keeped still all the noble men, together with the Captain, sir William Oliphant : and such as would not swear homage to him ( pretending to be protector of Robert Bruses right ) he sent prisoners to London. Having in this Castle Intercepted diverse of John Cummings friends, he procured them to draw him to a party with him, in which he so bluffed him with hopes of the King dom.

## The Printer to the Reader.

om, and with fear of utter undoing, that he joined himself and his friends to the English, who by his accession easily pressed forward with the course of victory, as far as the outmost bounds of Rossie: And in his back coming carried away with him into England all Books, Registers, Histories, Laws, and Monuments of the Kingdom; and amongst others, the fatal Marble Chair, whereupon the former Scots Kings used to be crowned at Scone: on which was engraven Prophecie, bearing, that, *Where ever this Chair should be transported, the Scots should command there.* He carried also with him all the learned men and professors of Scotland among others the famous subtle Doctor John Duns, surnamed *Scotus*) thinking hereby so to discourage and esteminate the minds of the Scots, that they should cast off all care recovering their liberty; the memory thereof being drowed in oblivion. At his return into England he left his Cousin Sir Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke Viceroy, laying fortified all Cattles with strong Garlions.

The Scots who stood for the liberty of the Country, being forsaken by John Cumming, sent earnest letters to France to move Wallace to return: He was then making war upon the English in Guyan. But hearing the mischiefs of his Country, obtained leave of the French King to return: and secretly amassing some of the remainder of his old friends, covered divers Castles and Towns in the North, and having greatly increased his Army besieged Saint Johnstoun, till it was rendered: But as he proceeded in the course of his victories, he was betrayed by his familiar friend Sir John Fentreith, to the Lord Aymer Valence, who sent him into England, where by King Edwards command he was put to death, and his body quartered and sent into the principall cities of Scotland, to be set up for a terror to others.

Notwithstanding this cruelty prevailed little for the assuring of King Edwards conquest. New enemies arising whence he least expected: For as he returned from his last journey into Scotland, John Cumming and Robert Bruce meeting together, after long conference of the state of their Country, perceived that notwithstanding he had promised each of them apart his help to obtain the Crown of Scotland, yet his intention was only to use their assistance to conquer

## The Printer to the Reader.

Scots embracing the occasion, set upon the first battel, and easily discomfite them: the second also (albeit stronger by the joining of these who had fled) was after a long conflict put to the rout. By this the third battel coming to the revenge, put the Scots to a great strait, as being sore wounded, wearied, and weakned in the two former battels, and having to withstand a fresh enemy of far greater number: hereupon they were forced to kill all the captives (lest they should assist the enemy) and with their weapons to arm their Baggage-men: and setting forward both with courage and necessity (seeing no escape) after a long and hard fight, they put their enemies to flight. This was the 24 of March 1302.

King Edward sore incensed by this evil successe, sent for Robert Bruce younger out of Calice: whom he perswaded, that he had for a long time against Wallace defended his fathers right to the Crown of Scotland, that having put Wallace out of the way, he found the Cummings as great enemies: notwithstanding he intended yet once more to put that enemy out of the way, and to settle him in his Kingdom. The young Prince believing him, caused all his friends and favourers of Scotland to join with him, and entring the borders, spoiled the Countrey, and took diverse Castles as far as Dowglas. Some report that the Lady Dowglas (named Ferras an English woman) betrayed that Castle to the Bruce, who took the Lord William Dowglas captive with all his children and goods. The Lord himself was kept prisoner in Berwick, and thereafret in York, while he dyed. Meantime King Edward had prepared a mighty army both by land and sea: with which he entred Scotland, and subdued all before him, while he came to Striveling, keeping then by sir William Oliphant; who after a long Gedge, knowing of no relief, yeilded the Castle upon condition, that himself and all that were with him should passe with their lives safe: notwithstanding King Edward keepe still al the noble men, together with the Captain, sir William Oliphant: and such as would not swear homage to him (pretending to be protector of Robert Bruce's right) he sent prisoners to London. Having in this Castle intercepted diverse of John Cummings friends, he procured them to draw him to a party with him, in which he so blinded him wth hopes of the King-

## The Printer to the Reader.

om, and with fear of utter undoing, that he joined himself and his friends to the English, who by his accession easily sailed forward with the course of victory, as far as the utmost bounds of Rossie: And in his back coming carried away with him into England all Books, Registers, Histories, Laws, and Monuments of the Kingdom: and among others, the fatal Marble Chair, whereupon the former Scots Kings used to be crowned at Scone: on which was engraven Prophecy, bearing, that, *Where ever this Chair should be transported, the Scots should command there.* He carried also with him all the learned men and professors of Scotland among others the famous subtle Doctor John Duns, surnamed *Scotus*) thinking hereby so to discourage and extinguish the minds of the Scots, that they should cast off all care of recovering their liberty & the memory thereof being drowned in oblivion. At his return into England he left his Cousin Sir Aymer de Valence, Earl of Pembroke Viceroy, laying fortified all Castles with strong Garrisons.

The Scots who stood for the liberty of the Country, being forsaken by John Cumming, sent earnest letters to France to move Wallace to return: He was then making war upon the English in Guyan. But hearing the mischiefs of his Country, obtained leave of the French King to return: and secretly amassing some of the remainder of his old friends, recovered divers Castles and Towns in the North, and having greatly increased his Army besieged Saint Johnstoun, till it was rendered: But as he proceeded in the course of his victories, he was betrayed by his familiar friend Sir John deeneith, to the Lord Aymer Valence, who sent him into England, where by King Edwards command he was put to death, and his body quartered and sent into the principall cities of Scotland, to be set up for a terror to others.

Notwithstanding this cruelty prevailed little for the assuring of King Edwards conquest. New enemies arising whence he least expected: For as he returned from his last journey into Scotland, John Cumming and Robert Bruce meeting together, after long conference of the state of their Country, perceived that notwithstanding he had promised to each of them apart his help to obtain the Crown of Scotland, yet his intention was only to use their assistance to conquer

## The Printer to the Readers.

conquer and assure to himself: as he well declared by spoiling the Countries of all Monuments publick and private. Hereupon they agreed that Cumming should quite all his rights to the Crown in favour of the Bruce, and that Bruce should give him all his lands for his assistance. This Contract written and sealed by both parties, Bruce returned into England with the Host, waiting for a fit time to escape from King Edward, in the mean time Wallace returning and recovered many places in Scotland, sent privily to Bruce to come home and take the Crown, and to his brother Edward Bruce, a most valiant youth, who coming out of Ireland, took sundry strengths in Annandale and Galloway. Cumine who had kept old enmity with Wallace, notwithstanding that Bruce by his means should come to the said Crown, revealed the Contract betwixt him and Bruce to King Edward: who at first delayed to cut off Robert Bruce till such time as he might get the rest of his brethren in his own hands. Bruce advertised of his danger by the Earl of Gloucester (some call him the Earl of Montgomery) his old friend who had sent him a pair of sharp spurs and some crownes and Gold, as if he had borrowed the same, guessing the meaning of this propine, caused by night shoe three horse back wth John and postled away from the Court wth two in his company, and on the fifth day (the way being deep in winter) arrived at his own Castle of Lochmabane, where he found his brother Edward wth Robert Fleming, James Lyndesay, Roger Kirkpatrick, and Thomas of Charsell, who told him how Sir Wallace was betrayed by Sir John Menteith and the Cumins compunction a few dyes before. Immediately thereafter they intercepted a messenger with letters from Cumine to King Edward, desiring that Bruce should be dispatched in haste wth least (being a noble man much favoured by the commons) assault he should raise greater flus. The treachery of John Cumine, before only suspected, was hereby made manifest, which incensed the Lord Bruce, that ryding to Dumfries, and finding Cumine at the masse in the Gray-sriers, after he had shewne him his letters, in impatience he stabbeth him wth his Dagger: the other who were about him doing the like, and not only dispatching him, but also his Cousin Sir Edward Cumine and others who assisted him. This slaughter rotted

## The Printer to the Reader.

spoill out the ninth of Februry in the beginning of the year  
private m<sup>6</sup>. as we now account.

The Bruce thus rid of one enemy, found a great number  
should it were arising out of his ashes, even the whole puissant  
contrame of Cumine, with their allies, the Earl of March, the  
Lord of Lorn, the Lord Abernethy, the Lord of Brechin the  
escape Lord Soulles. The most part of the North, and al Gallow-  
ay followed the Cumines, the Lord of Lorn was of great  
power in the Highlands : The Earl of March and Lord  
William Soulles commanded the Mers, with Barwick, and  
at the Borders : All which they yeelded to King Edward, and  
all maintained against Robert Bruce. At the same time his two  
brotheren Thomas and Alexander Bruce, with Reinald Craw-  
e the younger, secretly landing in Galloway, were taken by  
the man Mackdugall a great man in Galloway, and sent to  
Bruce king Edward, who caused them all three to be hanged. On  
the other side assembled to him (besides these above-named)  
Glocester young Lord James Dowglas (who hearing of his fathers  
death had returned from France, where he was at Shooles,  
mes and stayed a time with his kins-man William Lambert  
(Archishop of Saint Andrews) Earl Malcolme Lennox, Earl  
Edward John of Aithole (although of the Cumines blood, yet  
son being father in Law to Edward Bruce) sir Neil Campbell,  
Sir Gilbert Hay, Sir Christopher Seaton, Sir Thomas Randall,  
brother Hugh Hay, John Somervale, David Barclay, Alexander  
Rogard Simon Fraser, Sir Robert Boyd, Sir William Haliburton,  
hough sundry who hap stood with Wallace before. With this  
company he past to Scone, and took upon him the Crown  
of Scotland in April, 1306. After this he gathered an army,  
King Edward to besiege Saint Johnstoun: but finding his power  
was too weak he retired to Methven, where he was unexpectedly  
assaulted, and discomfited by Sir Aymer de Valence: but with  
small losse of men, except some who were taken, as Randall,  
Barclay, Fraser, Inchmartine, Somervale, and Sir Hew  
, and lay who were constrained to swear homage to King Ed-  
ward. The commons discouraged with this hard success,  
whilering the English, forlook the new King, who had a few  
company of gentlemen about him: with whom he travel-  
led towards Argyle, meaning to lurk for a time with his  
brother in law Sir Neil Campbell. But he was encountered by  
the

## The Painter to the Readers

the way by John of Lorn Cousin to John Cumming, and constrained to flee, albeit with small slaughter of his own folk. After this second discomfiture, he sent his Queen (being daughter to Grany Earl of Mar) with his brother, Sir Ne Bruce, and John Earle of Athole to the Castle of Kildrummy in Mar. The King of England sent his son Prince Edward with a mighty Host to besiege this Castle. The Queen hearing this, fled to the Girth of Tane in Rosse, but the Earl of Rosse took her and her daughter, and sent them captives into England. The Castle of Kildrummy was traitorously burnt by one of the Garrison, all that were within taken and hanged at command of the English King.

King Robert seeing Winter approach, and finding no retreat in the main land, retired with his most entrie friends to his old freind Angus Lord of the Isles, with whom he stayed a short time in Kintyre, and thereafter sailed over into the Yle of Raughrine, where he lurked all the winter every man esteeming him to be dead. The next spring landed quietly in Carrick, and on a sudden intercepted his own Castle of Turnberry, the Lord Persie flying home out of it into his own Countrey, Sir James Dowglas departing thence secretly, came into Dowglasdale, and by meanes of Thomas Dickson an old servant of his Father, he recovered his own Castle of Dowglas, and cast it down, once and again. Therefore he returned to King Robert to Cumnock, shewing him that Aymer de Valence and John of Lorn with an army were coming against him. The King with six hundred valiant men keepeed themselves in a strong place waiting while Sir Aymer should invade: but took heed to John of Lorn, who fetching a compassie set upon him back with eight hundred Highland men: and had well nigh enclosed him about. The King perceiving the danger, divided his men in three, and appointing where they should meet at night, fled three sundry wayes. John of Lorn having a slouth-bound pursued still after the King, who putt away all that were in his company, save one man, fled into the next wood, and with great difficulty escaped the Slouth bound, Sir Aymer disappointed of this enterprise, shortly thereafter with fifteen hundred chosen men, very nigh surprised the King in Glentrole wood, but the King with his

## The Printer to the Reader:

men taking courage so resolutely, defended the place (being very strong) & killed diverse of the first who assaulted them, that the rest fled back : Thereafter with more courage he went in to the fields, and reduced Kile and Cunghame to his obedience. Sir James Dowglas also with threescore men lying in an ambush at a strait place in Cunghame called the Netherfoord, where sir Philip Mowbray was passing with one thousand men against the King (being then in Kyle) killed many of them, and put the rest to flight. On the tenth of May following, sir Aymer with three thousand men came against the King, then lying at Gaston in Kyle. King Robert hearing of his comming (albeit he exceeded not six hundred men) came forth against him at a place under Lowdown hill: which he so fortified on either hand with dykes and fosses, that the enemies could not enclose him on the sides : and so by the stout and resolute valour of so few, sir Aymer was put to flight: which he took so sore to heart, that he retired into England, and gave over his office of Wardan or Viceroy, John of Britain Earl of Richmond being sent into Scotland in his place.

King Robert after this past into the North, leaving sir James Dowglas on the borders : who taking his own Castle of Dowglas by a stratagem, razed it to the ground, and in new dayes chased all the English out of Dowglasdale, Attrick Forrest, and Jedburgh Forrest, and took sir Thomas Randall the Kings sesters son (who had followed the English ever since his captivity) and sir Alexander Stewart of Bonkle, sir Alexander and Simon Fraser meeing King Robert in the North, showed him how John Cumine Earl of Buchan, David Lord Brechin, sir John Mcutray, and the rest of the Cumian faction, where gathering an army against him. Meanwhile by the assistance of his freinds in these quarters, on sudden he surprized the Castle of Innerness, the fame of which victory caused many other strengths to yeeld (all which he overthrew) and greatly increased the number of his friends. In his returning taking sicknesse at Innerury, suming set upon him : The King after his friends had for a time defended him, convalescing somewhat, went out to the field, and so hardly assaulted his enemy at old Meldrum, which hat (albeit their number was far greater) yet they took

the

## The Printer to the Reader.

the flight. With the like successe he set upon the King in Glenesk in Angus, whera being shamefully put to flight, he fled into England with Sir John Moubray, and dyed there shortly. Lord David Brechin fortifid his own Castle, but David Earl of Abole forced him to yeeld it and himself to the King. Mean time Philip Fraser took the Castle of Forfar; And the King persuing this victory, reduced all the North to his obedience: and joyning with Lord James Douglaſſe, returning from the South with his two captives, he took Saint Johnſtoun by surprisall: from thence he pak into Lorn, the Lord whereof had embushed two thousand men on the side of an ſteep hill, where the King behoued to enter thorow a narrow paſſage: But Sir James Douglaſſe with Sir Alexander Fraser, and Sir Andrew Gray, climbing the hill, came ſuddenly on their backs, and put them to flight. John of Lorn fled into England by ſea, his father Lord Alexander Macdugall yeelded himſelf, and the Castle of Dunſtaſſage to the King.

By this means all on the North ſide of Forth was reduced to obedience, Sir Edward his brother in the meau time with long and hard fighting had conquered Galloway: James Douglaſſe by a Stratagem ſurprised the ſtrong Castle of Roxburgh on the Faſtings-eve, while all the Garrison (after the custome of the time) were feaſting and playing theroy. The report whereof ſo whered the courage of the valiant Thomas Randall (newly reſtored to his Uuncles fauour, and made Earl of Murray) that having besieged the Castle of EDINBURGH for ſome moneths, he ſet himſelf by all means to carry the ſame: which he obtained by a narrow paſſage up through the Rock diſcovered to him: by whid he and ſundry stout gentlemen ſecrely paſſed up, & ſcalling the wall, after long and dangerous fighting, made themſelves the maſters of the place. The Garſons of Rugline, Lanerick, Durnfreis, Aire, Duudie and Bute, hearing this, yeelded up theſe Caſtles, which were all razed. The Yle of Man also returned to the obedience of the Crown of Scotland, Sir Edward Bruce having besieged Striviling Caſtle, three moneths agreed with the Captain Sir Philip Moubray, that if the King of England did not rescue him within twelve moneths thereaſter, the Caſtle ſhould be yeelded to King Robert.

## The Printer to the Reader?

Robert? Albeit this seemed a rash provocation of so mighty  
King Edward the second ( who some seven years before  
had succeeded his Father Edward Longbanks, but far dege-  
nerat from his valour ) having not only England and Ire-  
land and many Englized Scots, with the Duchie of Guyan,  
Bourdeaux, and other parts of France subject unto him,  
also the Low countreys strictly confederat wth him : Yet  
King Robert prepared himself to encounter him in the fields  
& gathered some five and threy thousand men, few, but va-  
iant. The King of England had above an hundred thousand  
foot, and ten thousand horse: with which multitude inten-  
ding to destroy the whole inhabitants of Scotland, & to divide  
the land to his followers, he came to Bannokburn (some two  
miles beneath Striviling) where on the twenty one of June,  
1314. He was encountered by the Scots, and after long and  
hard fighting his great army put to rout: himself with a small  
company fleeing into Dumbar, was sent by the Earl into Eng-  
land in a fisher boat, leaving two hundred Noblemen and  
gentle-men killed by the Scots, and as many taken; the num-  
ber of the commons slain and taken, was incredible: of Scots  
was slain two gentle-men of note Sir William Wepont, & Sir  
Walter Rose, with four thousand common Souldiers. Af-  
aylogter this victory, Striviling being yeelded, and Dumbartan got  
of the en by composition, the Earl of March, the Lord Soules, and  
Aberneby, and others of the Cumines allies, were reconciled to  
the King: who p<sup>t</sup> into the Yles, and brought them to obe-  
silence, taking Iohn of Lorn captive, who died in prisō in Logh-  
arrowen. Thus Scotland was freed of the bondage of England, ex-  
cept Berwick, which was recovered four years thereafter, 1318:  
and the Scots making diverse incursions into England under  
the leading of Earl Thomas Randall and James Lord Domglasse  
requited the harms received from them before, and enriched  
themselves with spoll. As for the Authority of these two Hi-  
stories, although they possibly erre in some circumstancies of  
time, place, & number, or names of men, yet generally they  
wrke the truth of the story of these times both at greater  
length, & upon more certain information, then these who have  
written our Chronicles. So committing them to thy di-  
gen: perusal (gentle and courteous Reader) I wish yo<sup>u</sup>  
profit thereby, and all happinesse from God: Farewell.



## A Table of the Contents of this B O O K.

	Page
The Genealogie of Wallace.	1
Barwick ana Dumbar taken.	2
Balliol deposed.	3
Wallace killeth Selbie.	4
Wallace falleth in Irwin.	5
Wallace slew the Churle in Aire.	6
Wallace slew Lord Perries steward.	7
Wallace imprisoned in Aire.	8
Battell of Lowdon-hill.	9
Wallace revengeith the slaughter of his father and brother on Lowdon-hill.	10
Englishmen took peace with Wallace.	11
Wallace slayeth the Buckler-player in Aire.	12
Wallace wan the Peel of Gargunnok.	13
Wallace passeth to Saint Johnstoun, and slew the Captain, and wan Kinlewin.	14
Wallace passeth to Short-wood-shawes.	15
Wallace sold to the Englishmen by his Lemman.	16
Wallace escaped at Elchock-park, and killeth Fawdon.	17
Wallace passeth to Lochmabane.	18
Wallace winneth the Castle of Crawfurd.	19
Wallace marrieth. Hesilrig slew his wife in Lanerk: Wallace slew Hesilrig for the same.	20
The Battell of Bicker.	21
Wallace burnt the barns of Aire, and slew Lord Persic.	22
Wallace slew Mackfadyean.	23
Wallace winneth Saint Johnstoun.	24
The battell at S'civilling bridge.	25
Wallace putteh Corpatrick out of Scotland.	26
Wallace gave Corpatrick, Bishop Beik, and Robert Bruce, battell.	27
Wallace abiderh three quarters of a year in England, and cometh home without battel.	28
	29

The TABLE.

W	siege of York.	201
2	ace taken with England.	215
3	llace passeth into France.	229
4	llace fought with the Red Reaver, and vanquished him.	233
5	llace passeth in Guyen.	246
6	llace wan Saint Johnstoun,	255
7	ack-Iron-side Forest.	258
8	llace winneth Lochlevin:	270
9	winning of Airth.	273
10	llace burnt the Englishmen in Dumbartan.	276
11	llace rescueth sir William Dowglas in Sanquhair,	282
12	battel of Fawkirk.	295
13	llace killeth John of Lyn upon the sea.	311
14	g Edward subdueth Scotland.	326
15	llace conquereth Guyen.	333
16	llace slayeth two Champions.	337
17	llace killeth a Lyon in the Barrace.	339
18	llace returneth from France, is at the battel of El-	
19	chock-Park.	343
20	llace besiedgeth Saint Johnstoun.	357
21	llace is betrayed by Sir John Menteith, and martyred	
22	in England.	363

The end of the TABLE.



## THE LIFE AND ACTS

of the most Famous and Valiant Champion,

Sir *William Wallace*,Knight of *Ellerslie*.

## THE FIRST BOOK.

C H A P. I. *Edinburger*


Ur Antecessours, of whom we should  
oft read,

And hold in thende their fame and  
worthy deed;  
We let over-slide, through very  
lothfulnesse,

and cast us ever to other busynesse.

vain gaming is set our whole intent,  
which hath been seen into these times by-went:  
our next neighbours that came of *Brutus* blood,  
they often times to *Scots* wiste little good :  
though now of late God turn'd their mind & wil,  
at great kindness they have shown us untill.

the hearts of people the L O R D hath in his hand,  
may them rule, and guide at his command :  
and though all leids would have this land in thrall,  
byone his power G O D can against them all:  
we have seen in our Forebears before;  
of these parables, as now, I speak no more.

We read of one right famous in renown,  
 Of worthy blood, that reigned in this Region :  
 And henceforth now, I will my purpose hold,  
 Of William Wallace, as ye have heard it told.  
 His fore-fathers who like to understand,  
 Of old lineage, and true blood of Scotland :  
 Sir Rannald Crawford, right Sheriff of Aire,  
 So in his time he had a daughter fair,  
 To young Sir Rannald, Sheriff of that Town,  
 Was sister fair, of good fame and renown :  
 Malcome Wallace her got in marriage,  
 That Ellerstoun had in heritage.

Auchenbothie, and many other place,  
 The second Oye he was to good Wallace :  
 The which Wallace full hardily had wrought,  
 When Walter, heir of Wallace to him sought.  
 Who likes to hear more knowledge in that part,  
 Co read the line of the first Stewart.

Now Malcom Wallace got with his lady bright  
 Malcome Wallace, a good and gentle Knight,  
 And William too, as Chronicles bears on hand,  
 Who after was rescuer of Scotland.  
 When it was lost with treason and falsenesse,  
 Over-set with foes, it fared through Gods grace  
 Alexander our worthy King forlorn,  
 By eventure his life lost at Kinghorn.  
 Three years still the Realm stood desolate,  
 Where-through there rose a full grievous debt  
 Our Prince David, Earle of Huntingtown,  
 Three daughters had of great fame and renown  
 Of the which three came Bruce, Balliol & Hastings  
 Two of these three desired to be King :

The Balliol claimed of the first gree lineally,  
And Bruce the first male of the gree by gree.  
To Edward soon into England they send,  
Of this great strife, they thought he should make  
Folly it was ( indeed it happened so ) (end.)  
Succour to seek of their old mortall foe.

Edward Ling-shanks had now begun his war  
Upon Gascoign, into an awfull fear :

The lands which he claimed stood in such case,  
He thought full soon to make a whole conquesse:  
To Norham Kirk he came withouten maire,  
The Councel then of Scotland met him there :  
Full subtilly he charged them in bandown,

As their over-Lord, to hold of him the Crown,  
Bishop Robert, in his time right worthy,

Of Glasgow Lord; said, That we do deny,  
Any over-Lord, but the great GOD above.

The King was wroth, and home he did remove:  
Set John Balliol followed on him so fast,

To hold of him he granted at the last :

And contrare right, a King he made him there,  
Where-through Scotland repented it full saire.

So the Balliol our Lords would not consent,

Edward forth-with set down a Parliament;

He called Balliol to answer for Scotland :

the wise Lords soon caused him break that band :

In Abbot past, and give over his alledgeance,

Edward then took it in great grievance.

His Host he rail'd, and came to wark on Tweeds :

Hee for to fight, as then he had great dread.

To Corgspatrick of Dumbar soon he send,

His counsell askt, for he the Countrey kend :

Where he was brought in presence of the King,  
By subtill band they pocked up this thing.

C H A P. II. *The battel of Barwick.*

**E**arl Patrick then to Barwick can pursue,  
Received he was, and trusted very true :  
The King followed with his men of renown,  
After mid-night at rest was all the Town.  
*Corspatrick* rose, the keyes well he knew,  
Let bridges down, and portculzies they drew :  
*Edward* entred, and caus'd slay hastily,  
Of men and women, eight thousand and fifty,  
And children too, by this false eventure,  
Of true Scots escaped no creature.

A Captain there this false King hath made,  
Toward Dumbar, without rest they rade.

C H A P. III. *The battel of Dumbar.*

**V**Here gathred was great power of Scotland  
Against *Edward*, in battel for to stand :  
The three Earls was entred in that place,  
Of Mar, Menteith, and Athol upon case.  
In the Castle the Earle gart hold them in,  
That to their men without they could not win ;  
Nor yet to them supplying for no mo ;  
The battels then together fast they go,  
And many slain there was, without mercy ;  
Of true Scots over-set with subtily.  
Earle Patrick then, when the fighting was fellest,  
To our foe turn'd, and harming did us maist.  
Is none in the world that skaiths may do maist,  
Then well trusted in-born familiare.  
Our men are slain without redemption,  
Through these deeds whole, tint was this Region.

Chap.4. of Sir William Wallace 5

CHAP. IV. How King Edward and Corpatrick came to Scoon, and disposed John Balliol, and had with them the Heirs of Scotland.

King Edward past, and Corpatrick to Scoon,  
And there he got the homage of Scotland soon  
For none was left the Realm for to defend ;  
For John Balliol then to Montrose they send,  
And him deprived for ay of his Kingrike :  
Then Edward himself was called a Royal Rike.  
The Crown he took upon the self-same stane,  
That Gathelus sent with his son from Spain,  
When Iber Scot first into Scotland came :  
That Kenneth King, the second of that name,  
Brought it to Scoon. and gart it stable thair,  
Where Kings were crown'd eight hunder years &  
Before the time that King Edward it fand. (mair,  
These jewels he gart turse into England :  
In London set in witnesse of that thing,  
By conquest then of Scotland made him King.  
where that stone stands, Scotland should master be.  
God choose the time, for Margarets heirs to see,  
Eight score they led of greatest that they fand.  
All heirs with them, and Bruce out of Scotland,  
That office then he keeped but short time.  
I may not now put all the deeds in Ryme ;  
On Chronicles why should I tarry lang ?  
To Wallace again now briefly will I gang.  
Scotland was lost when he was but a Childe,  
All over-set with our enemies wilde :  
His father Malcom in the Lennox fled,  
His eldest son thither with him he led.  
His mother fled with him from Ellerfie,



# A Table of the Contents of this B O O K.

	Page
<b>T</b> He Genealogie of Wallace.	1
Barwick ana Dumbar taken.	1
Balliol deposed.	1
Wallace killeth Selble.	1
Wallace falleth in Irwin.	1
Wallace slew the Churle in Aire.	1
Wallace slew Lord Peries steward.	1
Wallace imprisoned in Aire.	2
Battle of Lowdon-hill.	2
Wallace revengeth his daughter of his father and brothers on Lowdon-hill.	3
Englishmen took peace with Wallace.	3
Wallace fayeth the Buckler-player in Aire.	3
Wallace wan the Peel of Gargunnok.	4
Wallace passeth to Saint Johnstoun, and slew the Captain, and wan Kinlewin.	4
Wallace passeth to Short-wood-shawes.	5
Wallace sold to the Englishmen by his Lemman.	6
Wallace escaped at Elchock-park, and killeth Fawdon.	6
Wallace passeth to Lochmabane.	6
Wallace winneth the Castle of Crawfurd.	9
Wallace marrieth. Hefirig slew his wife in Lanerk.	104
Wallace slew Hefirig for the same.	106
The Battell of Bigger.	117
Wallace burnt the barns of Aire, and slew Lord Perie.	126
Wallace slew Mackfadyan.	158
Wallace winneth Saint Johnstoun.	166
The battell at Striviling bridge.	171
Wallace putteh Corpatrick out of Scotland.	178
Wallace gave Corpatrick, Bishop Belk, and Robert Bruce, battell.	184
Wallace abideth three quarters of a year in England, and cometh home without battel.	191

The TABLE;

1	sledge of York.	201
2	ce taken with England.	215
3	llace passeth into France.	229
4	llace fought with the Red Reaver, and vanquisht him.	233
5	llace passeth in Guyen.	246
6	llace wan Saint Johnstown.	255
7	ock-Iron-side Foreſt.	258
8	llace winneth Lochlevin:	270
9	winning of Airth.	273
10	llace burnt the Englishmen in Dumbartan.	276
11	llace rescueth Sir William Dowglas in Sanquhaſt,	282
12	battel of Fawkirk.	295
13	llace killeth John of Lyn upon the ſea.	311
14	Edward ſubdueth Scotland.	326
15	llace conquereth Guyen.	333
16	llace slayeth two Champions.	337
17	llace killeth a Lyon in the Barreſt.	339
18	llace returneth from France, & at the battel of Eſt-	
19	chock-Park.	343
20	llace besiegeth Saint Johnſtown.	357
21	llace is betrayed by Sir John Menteith, and married	
22	in England.	363

The end of the TABLE.





THE LIFE AND ACTS  
of the most Famous and Valiant Champion,

*Sir William Wallace,*

Knight of Ellerlie.

*Edinburgh*

THE FIRST BOOK.

C H A P. I. *Edinburgh*

Ur Antecessours, of whom we should  
oft read,

And hold in m<sup>ind</sup>e their fame and  
worthy deed;

We let over-slide, through very  
slothfulnesse,

d cast us ever to other businesse.

vain gaming is set our whole intent,

which hath been seen into these times by-went:

ur next neighbours that came of Brutus blood,

sy often times to Scots wiste little good :

ough now of late God turn'd their mind & wil,

at great kindness they have shown us untill.

the hearts of people the L O R D hath in his hand,

may them rule, and guide at his command :

though all leids would have this land in chrall,

done his power G O D can against them all:

we have seen in our Forebears before;

of these parables, as now, I speak no more.

We read of one right famous in renown,  
 Of worthy blood, that reigned in this Region :  
 And henceforth now, I will my purpose hold,  
 Of *William Wallace*, as ye have heard it told.  
 His fore-fathers who like to understand,  
 Of old lineage, and true blood of *Scotland* :  
 Sir *Rannald Crawford*, right Sheriff of *Aire*,  
 So in his time he had a daughter fair,  
 To young Sir *Rannald*, Sheriff of that Town,  
 Was sister fair, of good fame and renown :  
*Malcome Wallace* her got in marriage,  
 That *Ellerslie* then had in heritage.  
*Auchenbothie*, and many other place,  
 The second Oye he was to good *Wallace* :  
 The which *Wallace* full hardily had wrought,  
 When *Walter*, heir of *Wallace* to him sought.  
 Who likes to hear more knowledge in that part  
 Go read the line of the first *Stewart*.

Now *Malcom Wallace* got with his lady bright  
*Malcome Wallace*, a good and gentle Knight,  
 And *William* too, as *Chronicles* bears on hand,  
 Who after was rescuer of *Scotland*.  
 When it was lost with treason and falsoenesse,  
 Over-set with foes, it fred through Gods grace  
*Alexander* our worthy King forlorn,  
 By eventure his life lost at *Kinghorn*.  
 Three years still the Realm stood desolate,  
 Where-through there rose a full grievous debat  
 Our Prince *David*, Earle of *Huntingtown*,  
 Three daughters had of great fame and renown  
 Of the which three came *Bruce*, *Baliol* & *Hailes*  
 Two of these three desired to be King :

The *Baliol* claimed of the first gree lineally,  
And *Bruce* the first male of the gree by gree.  
To *Edward* soon into *England* they send,  
Of this great strife, they thought he should make  
Folly it was ( indeed it happened so ) (end.)  
Succour to seek of their old mortall foe.

*Edward* Ling-shanks had now begun his war  
Upon *Gascoign*, into an awfull fear :  
The lands which he claimed stood in such case ;  
He thought full soon to make a whole conquesse :  
To *Norham* Kirk he came withouten maire,  
The Council then of *Scotland* met him there :  
Full subtilly he charged them in bandown,  
As their over-Lord, to hold of him the Crown,  
*Bishop Robert*, in his time right worthy,  
Of *Glasgow* Lord; said, That we do deny,  
Any over-Lord, but the great GOD above.  
The King was wroth, and home he did remove :  
Set *John Balliol* followed on him so fast,  
To hold of him he granted at the last :  
And contrare right, a King he made him there,  
Where-through *Scotland* repented it full saire.  
To the *Balliol* our Lords would not consent,  
*Edward* forth-with set down a Parliament ;  
He called *Balliol* to answer for *Scotland* :  
The wise Lords soon caused him break that band :  
In Abbot past, and give over his alledgeance,  
*Edward* then took it in great grievance.  
His Host he rais'd, and came to wark on *Tweed* :  
Down at for to fight, as then he had great dread.  
*Corspatrick* of *Dumbar* soon he send,  
His counsell aske, for he the Countrey kend :

Where he was brought in presence of the King,  
By subtill band they pocked up this thing.

C H A P. II. *The battel of Barwick.*

**E**arl Patrick then to Barwick can pursue,  
Received he was, and trusted very true:  
The King followed with his men of renown,  
After mid-night at rest was all the Town.  
*Corspatrick* rose, the keyes well he knew,  
Let bridges down, and portculizies they drew :  
*Edward* entred, and caus'd slay hastily,  
Of men and women, eight thousand and fifty,  
And children too, by this false eventure,  
Of true Scots escaped no creature.

A Captain there this false King hath made,  
Toward Dumbar, without resting they rade.

C H A P. III. *The battel of Dumbar.*

**V**Here gathred was great power of Scotland  
Against *Edward*, in battel for to stand :  
The three Earls was entred in that place,  
Of Mar, Menteith, and Athol upon case.  
In the Castle the Earle gart hold them in,  
That to their men without they could not win ;  
Nor yet to them supplying for no mo ;  
The battels then together fast they go,  
And many slain there was, without mercy ;  
Of true Scots over-set with subtily.  
Earle Patrick then, when the fighting was fellef,  
To cur foe turn'd, and harming did us maist.  
Is none in the world that skaiths may do maire,  
Then well trusted in-born familiare.

Our men are slain without redemption,  
Through these deeds whole, tint was this Region His

## C H A P. His

Chap.4. of Sir William Wallace 5

CHAP. IV. How King Edward and Corstorphine came to Scoon, and deposed John Balliol, and had with them the Heirs of Scotland.

King Edward past, and Corstorphine to Scoon,  
And there he got the homage of Scotland soon.  
For none was left the Realm for to defend ;  
For John Balliol then to Montrose they send,  
And him deprived for ay of his Kingrike :  
Then Edward himself was called a Royal Rike.  
The Crown he took upon the self-same stane,  
That Gathelus sent with his son from Spain,  
When Iber Scot first into Scotland came :  
That Kenneth King, the second of that name,  
Broughe it to Scoon. and gart it stable thair,  
Where Kings were crown'd eight hunder years &  
Before the time that King Edward it fand. (mair,  
These jewels he gart turse into England :  
In London set in witnessse of that thing,  
By conquest then of Scotland made him King.  
where that stone stands, Scotland should master be.  
God choose the time, for Margarets heirs to see,  
Eight score they led of greatest that they fand.  
All heirs with them, and Bruce out of Scotland,  
That office then he keeped but short time.  
I may not now put all the deeds in Ryme ;  
On Chronicles why should I tarry lang ?  
To Wallace again now briefly will I gang.  
Scotland was lost when he was but a Childe,  
All over-set with our enemies wilde :  
His father Malcom in the Lennox fled,  
His eldest son thither with him he led.  
His mother fled with him from Ellerlie,

To Gowrie past, and dwelt in Kilspindie.  
The Knight his father thither had him sent,  
Unto his Uncle with a great intent,  
In Gowrie dwelt, and had their living there,  
An aged man, which received them fair :  
Then to Dandie, Wallace to school they send,  
While he of wit full worthily was kend :  
Thus he continued in his tender age,  
In arms then did many vassalage.  
When Saxon-blood in this Region could reign,  
Marking the will of that unrighteous King ;  
Many great wrongs they wrought in this Region,  
Destroy'd our Lords, & brake our buildings down,  
Both wives & widows they took at their own will;  
Nuns and maidens whom they liked to spill :  
King Herods part they play'd here in Scotland,  
Of young children that they before them fand.  
The Bishopricks that was greatest of vail,  
They took in hand of their Archbishops hail :  
Not for the Pope, they would no Kirk forbear,  
But gripped all through violence of wear.  
Glasgow they gave, as at their vaile was kend,  
To Diocie of Durham to a commend :  
Smal benefices they would not pursue :  
But for this thing full many other they slew.  
Hanged Barons, and wrought full meikle care :  
It was well known within the barns of Aire :  
There eighteen score was put to felon dead ;  
But GOD above hath sent us some remed.  
It is remembred farther in the tale,  
I will follow upon my purpose haile.  
William Wallace ere he was man of arms,

Great pity thought that Scotland took such harms:  
Meikle dolour it did him in his minde:  
For he was wise, right worthy, wight and kinde,  
In Gowrie dwelt still with this worthy man:  
As he increast, and with a bondan than,  
Unto his heart he had full meikle care,  
He saw the Sutheron multiply mair and mair,  
And to himself oft wold he make his moan,  
Of his good kin they had slain many one.  
Yet he was then seemly, strong, and bold,  
Where he of age was seventeen winters old.  
Weapons he bare, either good sword, or knife,  
Or he with them hapned full oft to strife.  
Where he found one out of another's presence,  
After to Scots they did no more offence.  
To cut his throat, or stick him suddenly,  
He cared not, found he them anerly,  
Andry wanted, but none knew by what way,  
Or as to him there could no man ought say:  
Little of speech, was courteous and benign,  
And of countenance he was both bold and yng.

C H A P. V. How Wallace slew young Selbie,  
the Constable's Son of Dundie.

**U**pon a day to Dundie he was send,  
Of crueltesse full little he was kend:  
The Constable was a felon man of wear,  
And unto Scots he did full meikle dear:  
Selbie he heght, dispiteous in outrage,  
A son he had near twenty years of age:  
Unto the town he used every day,  
Three men or four thereto with him to play.  
An hiely shrew, wanton in his intent,

Wallace he saw, and toward him he went :  
Seamly he was, right big, and well beseen,  
Into a weed of goodly gaining green.  
He called on him, and said, Thou *Scot*, abide;  
What devil(said he)thee graithed in so good weed?  
An horse mantle it was thy kinde to wear,  
A *Scots* whittle under thy belt to bear :  
Rough rulzions upon thine harlots feet ;  
Give me thy knife, what doth thy gear so meet ?  
To him he went his knife to take him fra,  
Fast by the collar *Wallace* can him ta :  
Under his hand his knife he braided our,  
For all his men that sembled him about :  
But help himself he knew of no remead,  
Without rescue he sticked him to dead.  
The Sq uyer fell, of him there was no more,  
His men followed on *Wallace* wonder sore.  
The preas was thick, and cummered them full ful  
*Wallace* was speedy, and greatly ala agast :  
The bloody knife was drawn in his hand,  
He spared none that he before him fand.  
The house he knew his Eme had lodged in,  
Thither he fled, farther he might not win.  
The good-wife there within the close saw he,  
And help he cryed, for him that died on tree :  
The young Captain hath fallen with me at strife,  
In at the doo<sup>r</sup> he went with his goodwife.  
A russet gown of her own she him gave,  
Above his weed which covered all the lave.  
A suddled courch over head and neck let fall,  
A worn white hat she breased on withall,  
For they should not long tarry at that Inne :

ave him a rock, and then sate down to spinne.  
 he Sutheron sought where Wallace was but dread.  
 they knew not well at what gate he in yeod :  
 that same house they sought him busily,  
 at he sate still and span right cunningly,  
 of his time he had not learned lang.  
 they left him so, and forth their gates can gang,  
 ith heavy chear, and sorrowfull in thought ;  
 o wit of him as then get could they mought,  
 ne Englishmen all then in barret bown,  
 de fire ~~All~~ Scots that were within the town  
 ec this good-wife held Wallace untill night,  
 ade him good chear, and put him out of sight.  
 through a dark g̃te she guided him full fast,  
 covert went, syn by the water past :  
 rebure the gate, for watches that was there :  
 is mother was into a great dispire :  
 When she him saw, she thanked heavens King,  
 and said, Dear son, so long where hast thou been ?  
 e told his mother of that sudden case,  
 hen weeped she, and said full oft alace :  
 r that thou cease, thou wilt be slain withall.  
 other, he said, God ruler is of all :  
 nsufferable are the people of Englands,  
 art of their yre me thinks we should gainstand.  
 is Emē he knew that he the Squyer slew,  
 or dread thereof in great langour he drew.  
 his passed over, while divers dayes were gane,  
 he good man dread that Wallace should be cane.  
 he Sutheron are full subtile every man,  
 great ditty for Scots ordain'd they than,  
 y the Law-days in Dundie set an Heir,

Then Wallace would no longer sojourn there.  
 His mother graithed her in a Pilgrims weed.  
 Himself disguised, syn gladly with her yeed.  
 A short sword under his weed bire he.  
 In all the land full many foes had he.  
 Both on their foot, with the more took they nocht.  
 Who spierd, she said, To S Margaret they sought,  
 Who served her, full great friendship they fand,  
 With Sutheron folks, for she was of England.  
 Beside Lundores the Ferric over they pait.  
 Then through the Ochil sped they wonder fast :  
 Into Dumferling they lodged all that night :  
 Upon the morn when that the day was light,  
 With gentle-women hapned them to passe,  
 Of England born, in Linlithgow winning was :  
 The Captains wife in Pilgrimage had been :  
 When she them met, and had good Wallace seen,  
 Good chear they made for he was wonder fair,  
 Not large of tongue, well taught, and debonare.  
 Forth talking thus of matters that was wrought,  
 while south over Forth with her son she him broght  
 Into Linlithgow they would not carry lang,  
 Their leave they took, to Dunipace they gang :  
 There dwelt his Eme, a man of great riches,  
 A mighty Parson, height to name Wallace :  
 Made them good chear, and was a full good-man  
 Welcomm'd them fair, and to them told he than  
 Did him to wit, the land was all in steer,  
 Treated them well, and said, My son so dear,  
 Thy mother & thou right here with me shal bide  
 While better be thy chance, what may betide.  
 Wallace answered, Westermore we will.

ur kin is slain, and that me liketh ill,  
nd other many worthy in that airt:  
ive I, will God, we shall us wreak on part.  
he Parson sighed, and said, My son so free,  
cannot know how that redresse may be.

What should I speake of frustrate at this tyde?  
or gifc of good he would not with him bide.

is mother and he, to Ellerfly they went,  
Upon the morn she for her brother sent:

In Corsbie dwelt, and was Sheriff of Aire,  
his father was dead, that lived long time there.

Her eldest son that meikle was of main,  
her Husband als at Lochmabane was slain:

Sir Malcome Wallace his name was but lies,  
his hoch sinews were cutted in that priele:

On knees he fought, feil Englishmen he flew,  
So him then sought mo fighters then anew:

On either side with spears they bare him down,  
There sticked they that good Knight of renouna.

Unto my tale I left at Ellerlie,  
Sir Rannald came unto his sister free:

Welcomm'd them, and asked of their intent,  
he pray'd that he to Lord Persie would went,

he irked of war, she would no farther flee,  
To purchase peace, in rest that she might be.

Sir Rannald had the Persie's protection,  
As for all part to take remission:

Then he caus'd wryte to his sister that tyde,  
In that respite Wallace would not abyde.

His mother he left, she weeped with heart full fair,  
His leave he took, then from his Emme can fare ::  
Young he was, and to Sutheron right savage,

Great room they had, despite, and eke out-trage such  
 Sir Rannald durst not then hold Wallace there,  
 For great perils he knew appearing were :  
 For they had whole the strengths of this Land :  
 What they would do, durst none against the stand  
 Sheriff he was, and used them among,  
 Ful sore he dread, that Wallace should take wron  
 For he & they could never well accord,  
 He got a blow, though he was lad or Lord,  
 That proffered him any lightnesse :  
 But they repaired over meikle to that place.  
 Als English Clerks in prophesie it fand,  
 How one Wallace should put them from Scotland.  
 Sir Rannald knew well a more quiet steed,  
 Where William might be better from their feed :  
 With his Uncle Wallace of Richartown,  
 Sir Richart heght that good Knight of renouna.  
 These lands whole then was his heritage,  
 But blind he was, so happened through coura ge  
 By Englishmen that did him meikle dear :  
 In his rising, he worthy was in wear.  
 Through hurt of veins, and minishing of blood,  
 Yet he was wise and of his counsel good.  
 In Februare Wallace was to him send,  
 Into April he bowned from him to wend.  
 But good service he did him with pleasance,  
 As in that space was worthy to advance.

CHAP. VI. How Wallace past to the water  
 Irwin, to take fish.

**S**O on a time he desired to play,  
 Ino April the three and twenty day :  
 To Irwin water, full to take he wend,

such fantasie fell into his intent :  
 To lead his net, a childe with him there yeed,  
 At he ere noon, was in a felon dread :  
 His sword he left, so did he never agaio,  
 Did him good, although he suffered pain.  
 If that labour as then he was not slie,  
 Happy he was, took fish abundantly.

Part of the day ten hours could over-passe,  
 Riding there came near by where Wallace was,  
 The Lord Persie, that was Captain of Aire,  
 From him he turned, and could to Glasgow fare.  
 Part of the Court had Wallace labour seen,  
 To him they rode five clade in garment green.  
 Saint Martins fish, said, Scot, now we would have  
 Wallace again them weekly answere gave,  
 Were reason, me think, ye should have part,  
 Faith should be dealt in all place with free heart:  
 He bade his boy give them of his weathering.  
 The Sutheron said, As now of thy dealing  
 We will not take, thou wouldest give us over small,  
 He lighted down, and from his boy took all.  
 Wallace said then, Gentle-men if that ye be,  
 Leave us some part, we pray, for charitie:  
 An aged Knight serves our Lady this day :  
 Good fiend, leave part, and take not all away :  
 Thou shalt have leave to fish, and take thee maire ;  
 All these surely shal in our flitting fare.  
 He serve a Lord, these fish shal to him gang.  
 Wallace answering, said, Thou art in the wrang.  
 whom thou st thou, Scot ? in faith thou serv'st a  
 To him he ran, and out a sword can draw. (blaw.  
 Wallace was wo, he had no weaponsthere,

But a paule-staff, which in his hand he bare :  
*Wallace* with it fast on the cheek him took,  
With so good will, while of his feet him shook.  
The sword flew from him a foot broad in the land  
*Wallace* was glad, and caught it soon in hand,  
And with the sword an acward stroke him gave  
Under the head, his craig in sunder drove.  
By that the rest lighted about *Wallace*,  
He had no help, but only on God's grace :  
On either side full fast on him they dang :  
Great peril was, if they had lasted lang,  
Upon the head with great yre he strook one,  
The shearing sword cut to the collar bone,  
Another he hit on the arm hastily,  
While hand and sword both on the land can ly.  
The other two fled to their horse again,  
He sticked him that last was on the plain.  
Three flew he there, two fled with all their might  
After their Lord, but he was out of sight.  
Taking the Mare, ere he and they could twio :  
To him they rode anone, ere they could blin,  
And cry'd, Abide, your men are martyred down,  
Right cruelly into this false Region :  
Five of your men here at the water bade,  
Fish you to bring, though it no profit made :  
We are escaped, but in field slain are three.  
The Lord asked, How many may there be ?  
We saw but one that hath overcome us all.  
Then leugh the Lord, and said, Shame on you fall,  
Since one you all hath put to confusion ;  
Who mones it most, the devil of hell him drown  
This day for me, in faith, he's not be sought.

Who

Whē Wallace thus the worthy work had wrought,  
 their horse he took, and gear that was left there;  
 gave over the craft, and went to fish no more.  
 Went to his Eme, and told him of the deed:  
 And he for wo near swelt out of his weed,  
 And said, Son, these tydings fits me sore,  
 They be known, thou may gate skaith therefore;  
 Uncle he said, no longer will I bide,  
 These Sutherons horse let see if I can ride:  
 Then but a childe in service for to make,  
 His Emes son with him he would not take.  
 His good Knight said, dear Cousing, I pray thee,  
 When thou wants good, come fetch enogh frō me;  
 Silver and gold he cauf'd one to him give:  
 Wallace then kneeled, and lowly took his leave.

*The end of the first Book.*



## THE SECOND BOOK.

### CHAP. I.

Now Wallace strew the Churle with his own staff in Aire.

**Y**oung Wallace then fulfilled of hie courage,  
 In prise of arms, desirous of vassalage.  
 Thy vassalage may never be forlorn,  
 Thy deed is known, though all the world had  
 For thy whole mind, labour, & busines, (sworne)  
 Was set in war, and very righteous:  
 And full great losse of thy dear worthy kin,  
 He rance or more remains thy minde within;

It was his life, and most part of his food,  
To see them shed the birning Southeron-blood;  
To Ochterhouse withoutten more he rode,  
And but short time in peace there he abode.  
There was one *Wallace* that welcomm'd him we  
Though *Englishmen* thereof had little feell :  
Both meat and drink at his will had he there,  
In *Langlane* wood when that he made repair.  
The gentleman full oft was his refet :  
With stuff of house full oft he can him bet :  
So he delir'd the town of *Aire* to see,  
His childe with him, and then no more took he  
Ay next the wood *Wallace* caus'd leave his horse he  
Then on his foot went to the market Crosse :  
The *Persie* was in the Castle of *Aire*,  
With *Englishmen* great number and repair,  
And all the town ruling on their own wayes,  
To many *Scots* they did ful great suppresse :  
All but abasing *Wallace* among them yeed,  
The rage of youth made him to have no dread.  
A Churle they had that great burdens did bear,  
Exceedingly he would lift mickle mair  
Then any three that they among them fand,  
And als by this one sport he took in hand,  
He bare a sting into a busteous pole,  
On this broad back, of any would it thole,  
But for a groat, as fast as he might draw.  
When *Wallace* heard speak of that merry saw,  
Then he desired at that market to be :  
For one stroak he bade him groats three.  
The Churle granted, of that proffer was fain,  
To pay that silver *Wallace* was full bane.

lace that sting took up into his hand,  
od; all sturdily before him could he stand :  
llace with that upon the back him gave,  
hile his rig-bone all into sunder drove.

when Churle was dead, of him I speak no mair,

the Englishmen assembled on Wallace there,  
ll on the field of folks fighting fast :

unabased, and not greatly agast,

oon the head one with the sting hit he,  
hile bone and brain he made in pieces flee.

another he stroak on the vaishnet of steel,

he tree then rave, and frushed every deal.

else the tree was lost, the Englishman was dead;  
or his craig-bone was broken in that stead.

he drew a sword that helped him in need,

throughout the thickest of the preasse he yeed,  
nd at his horse full fain he would have been.

wo griev'd him most, that cruel were and keen,  
Wallace returned as man of mickle main,

nd at one stroak the formost hath he slain :

full sore stroak the other got that tide,

ith his good sword, he made him there abide ;  
at the corslet brimly he him bare,

he grounden sword out through his body share,  
ve flew he there, ere he past from the town,

e got his horse, to Langlane made him bown :  
nd keeped the child, and let him not abide.

scaped thus, he can to Langlane ride.

ome followed him on horse, and some on foot,  
o take Wallace, as then it was no boot :

he trees were thick that keeped him full well,  
ut there to byde, he could never a deal.

It Good ordinance that effered for his estate,  
 His custome was at all times air and late :  
 The Squyer Wallace in Ochterhouse that was,  
 Both bed and meat for him they made to passe,  
 As for the time that he remained there,  
 But sore he longed to see the town of Aire.  
 Thither he past upon a market day.

Would God as then that he had bidden away,  
 His Emes servant for to buy fish he sent.  
 Sir Reynald Crawford the Sheriff then was ke

CHAP. II. How Wallace slew Lord Persie  
*Stewart, and was imprisoned in Aire.*

When he had cane such good as he had bog  
 The Persies Stewart right sadly to him sog  
 And said, Thou Scot, to whom buys thou this thin  
 To the Sheriff, he said, By heavens King.  
 My Lord shall have it, syn go fetch thee maire,  
 Wallace by chance, was near-by going there,  
 He went to him, and said, Friend, I pray thee,  
 The Sherriffs servant that thou would let him b  
 A lordly man the Stewart was of blood,  
 And thought Wallace him charged in terms rude  
 Go hence, thou Scot, the mickle devil thee spe  
 At thy Sherriffs ute thou weens us for to lead.  
 An hunting staff into his hand he bare,  
 Therewith he smote on William Wallace there  
 But with his tree little sunzie he made,  
 Fast by the coller him caught withoutten bade,  
 A full great knife fast to his heart stroak he,  
 Then from him dead shot him right suddenly.  
 Carter sensyn I trow he was na maire.  
 The Englishmen assembled Wallace there.

core were set in armour birnest bown,  
market-day, for Scots to keep the town;  
lace boldly he drew a sword of war,  
the brime the formost couth he bear,  
through the body sticked him to the dead,  
sundry mo, ere he past from that stead.

ward stroak another took he there  
ay, on the knee, the bone in sunder share.

third he stroak on a peasant of mailzie,  
craig in two no weeds might availie :  
Wallace fared as wood as a Lyon.

Englishmen that were on bargane bown,  
y kept the gate with spears rude and lang,  
dint of sword might no man to him gang.  
lace was harnest on his body well,

him they sought with sharp swords of steel,  
from his strength environed him about :

through the prease on a side he brake out,  
o a wall that stood by the sea-side,

well or wo there must he need abide,  
of their spears in pieces there he share,

en from the Castle other help came mair:

over the dyke they glaid on every side,  
ake down the wall no succour was that tide :

en Wallace knew of no ween but to die :  
win his death amongst them thus went he.

her part in great ire hewing fast,  
birnest brand it bursted at the last,

ke in the hilts, away the blade it flew,  
wist no ween, but forth his knife he drew :

e first he flew which him in hand hath hint,  
d other two he sticked with his dint.

The remenant to him with spears have soughht ta  
Bare him to ground, no further might he nou land  
The Lords bade, that they should not him sl A-  
To pine him more they charged him to ta H  
Into their Innes although that he had sworn, Arr  
Out of the gate by force they have him born, fo  
Thus good Wallace with Englismen was tan W  
In fault of help, for he was his alane: fo  
He could not cease, his courage so him bare, in it  
Favole fortune hath brought him in the snare pit  
These false gods full of unrighteousnesse, car  
And false Juno full of deceitfulnessse. x f  
These feigned gods, Wallace never yet knew, th  
Great righteousness him ay to mercy drew. fo  
His Kin might not get him for no kind thing he  
Might they have payed the ransome of a King re  
The more they bade, the more it was in vain, e  
Of their best men that day seuen hast they sl t  
They caus'd set him into a prison fell, ch  
Of his torments great pitty was to tell.  
Evil meat and drink they caus'd unto him give n  
Great marvel was if he might long there live. y  
And eke thereto he was in prison law.  
While they thought time on him to hold the L  
Leave I him thus into this painful stead, D  
While God above do send him some remed  
The plain complaint, and piteous lamenting,  
The wofull weeping that was for his taking,  
The tormenting of every creature :  
Alace ! they said : How shal our life endure ?  
The flower of youth into his tender age,  
Fortune of arms hath left him in thirlage,

On this day a Chiftain have we none,  
 ght take in hand, but young Wallace alone :  
 nou land is lost, he is caught in the snare,  
 A per-se of Scotland is in great care.

H A P. III. How Wallace was imprisoned  
 in Aire, and escaped.

Arreld herring and water they him gave,  
 Where he was set into that ugly cage:  
 food for him was feeble to commend,  
 said he thus, Good GOD me now receive,  
 spiteous sprit, and soul over all the lave :  
 careful life I may not now defend,  
 few Sutheron unto the death I drew,  
 that I rue indeed, and very true.  
 soon I will out of this world wend,  
 should now in prison make an end.  
 eternal GOD, why should I thus ways die,  
 my belief all whole remains on thee ?  
 thine own hand full worthily hath wrought:  
 thou remead, no life they ordain me :  
 the only Saviour that died the on tree,  
 given hel's prison, with thy blood hath me bought,  
 y wilt thou give thine handy-work for nought?  
 many other in great pain that I see,  
 of my life nothing else I sought.  
 O warred sword, of temper never true,  
 frushing blade in prison soon me threw.  
 Englishmen over little harms hath tane,  
 us they have undone mo than anew :  
 faithfull father despitefully they flew,  
 brother als, and good men many one,  
 is the date shall us overcome each one.

Of this Kingrick, dear God, when shalt thou  
Since my power thus suddenly is gone.

All worthy *Scots*, Almighty God you lead  
Since I no more in worship may you speed :  
In prison here me worthes to mischieve :  
Now silly *Scotland*, that of help hath great ne  
Thy Nation stands into a felon dread.  
Of worldliness right thus I take my leave.  
Of other paines, God let you never preave  
Though I for wo out of my wit should wen  
None other gift I may now to you give.

Adiew *Wallace*, sometime was strong and stou  
Thou must of need in prison long endure,  
Thy worthy *Kia* may not thee save for gold :  
Ladies weep that were baith mild and mure,  
In furious pains, thy mother that thee buri :  
For thou to her was dearer then the gold :  
Her most desire was to thee under mould.  
To worldlynesse, why should any assure ?  
For thou wert formed forcy on the fold,

Complain ye poor, thus as your schedul tel  
Complain to Heaven with words that never fai  
Complain your voice to the great GOD above  
Complain for him that sits in sytfull Cells :  
Complain his pain that thus in dolor dwells :  
In langour lyes for losing of their love.  
His furious pain was felon for to prove.  
Complain also ye birds, as blyth as bells,  
Some happy chance may fall for your behove.

Complain ye Lords, complain ye Ladys bright  
Complain for him that worthy was and wight  
Of *Saxons* sons that suffered mickle deare

complain for him that is in prison dight,  
d for no cause, *Scotland*, but for thy right?

complain also ye worthy men of wear:

complain for him who was your asper spear.

new Englishmen yet to the death he dight.

complain for him your triumph had to bear.

*Cellinus* his master Jaylour was now:

Englishmen, alace! why should we trow?

our worthy Kin are pyned on this wise:

each rule but right, is little to allow.

We thinks we should in barret make them bow  
our power, and so we do feill syse,

om their danger, Go D make us for to rise:

at well hath wrought before these times now,  
they mark ay to wait us with suppresse.

What would I more of *Wallace* torments tell,

the flux he took into that prison fell:

ar to the death likely he was to draw,

ey charged the Jailour there he should not dwel,  
t bring him forth soon out that ugly cell,

judgement, where that he should thole the law,

is man went down, and suddenly he saw,

to his sight, Death had him snapped well snell.

en said to him, He hath pay'd that he aw.

When they presumed he should be very dead,

ey caus'd servants withouten longer plead,

th short advise unto the wall him bare,

ey cast him over out of that bailfull stead:

f him they crowed there should be no remead.

a draff midding, where he remained there.

s first Nurse of the new town of *Aire*,

o him she came, which was full will of read,

And

And purchast leave, away with him to fare.

Into great ire they granted her to go.  
She took him up without words mo,

And on a cart unseemly they him cast:

Out over the water they led him with great  
To her own house withoutten any bo.

She warmed water, and als her servants fast,  
His body washt, while filth off him was past.  
His heart was wight, and flightered to and fro;  
And his two eyes at last cast up also.

His Foster-mother him loved attour the law  
Got milk to warm, his life if she might save.  
With all her cure, great kindnesse could him ky  
Her daughter had of twelve weeks a knave,  
Her childs paps in *Wallace* mouth it gave:  
The womans milk comforted him full swyth,  
Then in a bed they brought him for to lyth.  
And covertly they kept him in that cave,  
Him for to save, how secretly they might.

In their chamber they kepted him that tide  
She causid graith up a buird in the house side,  
With tapestry cloaths honoured with great figh  
And that the voice on every land should light,  
That he were dead, throughout the Land so wide  
In presence ay she weeped under sight;  
But goodly meas she graithed either night:  
And so befell into that self same tide,  
While farther more that *Wallace* worshed wigh

*Thomis Rymer* withoutten fail was than,  
Wich the Minister, which was a worthy man;  
He used oft to that religious place.  
The people deemed of meikle wit he can;

and so he did, although they blesse or ban :  
which happened sooth in many diverse place,  
cannot say, by wrong or righteousness :  
rule of war, whether he tint or wan,  
may be deem'd by division of grace.

This man that day at the market had been,  
*Wallace* knew this carefull case so keen.

Master asked, what tidings that he saw ?  
man answered, Of little beard, I mean.

Minister said, That hath been seldom seen,  
here *Scots* and *English* assembled on a row,  
as never yet so far, as I could know,  
it either a *Scot* would do a *Sutherloun* teen,  
he to him, as aventure might faw.

*Wallace*, ye know, was tane into that stead,  
over the wall I saw them cast him dead,  
of their prison, famisht for want of food.

Minister said, with heart heavy as lead,  
ch deed to them, me think should foster feads;  
he was wight, and come of gentle blood,  
*Thomas* answered, These tydings are not good,  
that be sooth, my self shall never eat bread;  
all my wit, here shortly I conclude.

A woman then of the new town of *Aire*,  
him she went when he was lying there,  
on her knees right lowly them besought,  
purchase leave, she might hence with him fare  
ghtlinesse they granted to her there,  
over the water into her house him brought,  
only him as goodly as she mought.

*Thomas* said, Yet shall I live no mair,  
at be true, by God that all hath wrought.

The Minister heard what *Thomas* said in plain,  
 He charged his man to speed him fast again,  
 To see the house, and warily to espy  
 What words he heard amongst them busily.  
 The man went out, at bidding was all bain,  
 To the new town to passe, he did his pain,  
 To that ilk house, and went in suddenly :  
 About he blinked unto the boord him by.  
 The woman rose, in heart she was not fain,  
 Who lyes here ? he did demand in plain.  
*Wallace*, she said, full worthy that hath been,  
 Then weeped she, that pity was to seen  
 The man thereto great credence gave he noug  
 Toward the boord he bowned as he best thoug  
 On knees she fell, and cryed, For Jesus sneen,  
 Let slander be, and from your thought it fleem  
 The men answered, By him that all hath wroug  
 I would his welfare, and cast into his thought,  
 Might I on life once see him with mine een.  
 He should be safe, though *England* would  
 She led him up to *Wallace* by the greeves,  
 He spake with him, then fast again can prease,  
 With glad bodeward, their mirths to amend,  
 And came again, and told them whole to end.  
 He told to them, the first tydings was lies.  
 Then *Thomas* said, Forsooth ere he deceise,  
 Many thousand on field shal take an end,  
 From this Region he shal the *Sutheron* send,  
 And *Scotland* thrice he shall bring to a peace,  
 Into this Region great God shal send him  
 All worthy men that have good wit to weare,  
 Beware that ye do not misdeem my tale.

erchance ye say, to Bruce was none such like,  
He was as good where deeds were to assayle,  
s of his hands, and bolder of Battel :  
ut Bruce was known right heir of this Kingrick ;  
or he had right, we call no man him like :  
ut Wallace thrice this Kingrick conquest hail,  
England far sought battel on that Rike.

C H A P. IV. *The battel of Lowdown-hill.*

Will return to my purpose again,  
When Wallace was relieved of his pain,  
the Country deem'd all whole that he was dead,  
his dearest Kin knew not of his remed :  
while whole he was, likely to go and ride,  
to that place he would no longer byde.  
is true keeper he sent to Ellersly,  
after him there he durst not let her be.  
ugher daughter als, her servants, and her childe,  
made them passe unto his mother milde.  
hen they were gone, no weapons there he saw  
d help him with, what eventure might faw :  
fle rusty sword in a nook he saw stand,  
thoutten belt, bose, buckler, or yet brand:  
ng time before it had been in that stead,  
aged man it left, when he was dead :  
drew the blade, and found it would well byte,  
ough it was foul, he took it with him tyte,  
d help his man, for thou shalt go with me,  
ile better come, will God soon may that be.  
ce, Sir Rannald as then he would not fare,  
go that passage, for Sutherland made repare,  
yeal Richardson full fain he would have been,  
get him horse, and part of armour sheen.

Then afterwards as he bowned to fare,  
Three Englishmen he met ryding to Aire,  
At their voyage in Glasgow forth had been:  
One Long-castle, that cruel was and keen,  
A bold Squyer, with him good yeomen two:  
*Wallace* drew by, and would have let them go:  
To him they ride, and said despitefully,  
Thou Scot, abide, I trow thou be a spy,  
Or else a thief, from presence would thee hide.  
Then *Wallace* laid, with sober words that tide:  
Sir, I am sick, for Gods love let me go.  
*Long-castle* said, Forsooth it bees not so:  
A felon friek thou seemest in thy fare:  
While men thee know, thou shalt with me to Aire  
Hint out his sword that was of noble hew,  
*Wallace* with that at his lighting him threw,  
Upon the craig with his sword hath him tane,  
Through braio and lyre, in sunder brake the barre,  
By he was fallen, the two were lighted down,  
To venge his death, on *Wallace* made them boone:  
The one of them upon the head he gave,  
The rousy blade unto the craig him clave:  
The other fled, and durst no longer byde,  
With a rude step, *Wallace* could after glyde,  
Cut through the ribs a sicker stroak gave he,  
While liver and lungs men might at once see.  
The horse he took, both weapons and armour  
Then thanked God with glad heart in that hour,  
Silver they had, all with him hath he tane,  
Him to support, for spending had he nane:  
Into great haste he rode to *Richardtown*,  
A glad sembly was at his lighting down,

hen Wallace met with Sir Richart that Knight,  
 for him had mourned, while feeble was his sight.  
 His two sons of Wallace was full fain,  
 they had him lost, yet God him saved agsin.  
 This Eme Sir Rannald to Richartown came fast :  
 The woman told by Corsbie as she past,  
 How Wallace escaped, then on their way yeed :  
 Sir Rannald yet was in a felon dread,  
 While he him saw, in heart he thought full long ;  
 Then suddenly in arms he him throng :  
 He might not speak but kissed him tenderly,  
 His troubled Sp'rit was in an extasie :  
 The glad tears braft from his eyes two,  
 Before that he spake, a long time held him so :  
 And at the last, right friendly then said he,  
 Welcome, Nevoy, welcome, dear son, to me :  
 Thanked be he that all the world hath wrought,  
 That fairly thee out of prison hath brought.  
 His mother came, and other friends anew,  
 With full glad will to see these tydings true :  
 Good Robert Boyde, that worthy was and wight,  
 Could not them crow, while he him saw with sight  
 From sundry parts they came to Richartown,  
 Till worthy folks that were of great renown.  
 Thus leave I them in mirth, gladness, & pleasure,  
 Thanking great GOD of this so happy chance,

*The end of the second Book.*



## THE THIRD BOOK.

### CHAP. I.

*How Wallace revenged the slaughter of his Father, and of his Brother, on Lowdown-hill.*

**T**N joyous July, when the flowers are sweet  
Digestable, engendring with the heat,  
Both flower and fruit, bushes & boughs bra  
Abundantly in every glonk and glaid :  
All bestial their right course to endure,  
Well helped are by working of Nature.  
On foot ascending to the Heavens hight,  
Conserued well by the Maker of might.  
Fish in the flood resorteth really,  
To mans food, the world to occupy.  
But Scotland so was wasted many a day,  
Through war, such skaith, that labour was away,  
Vittail grew skant ere August could appear,  
Through all the Land the food happened ful dea  
But Englishmen that riches wanted nane,  
By carriage brought their vittail in good wane,  
Stuffed houses with wine and good vernage,  
Enjoy'd this Land as their own heritage :  
This Kingrick whole they ruled at their will,  
Messengers then such tydings told them till,  
And told the Persie that Wallace living was,  
And from their prison in Aire escaped he :  
They trow'd it well, that Wallace past that stead,  
For Long-castle and his two men were dead.

They warried the chance that *Wallace* was so fast,  
 every part they were full greatly agast,  
 through prophesie that they had heard before.  
 And *Persie* said, What need words more?  
 If he be fast, he shal do great marvel:  
 were the best for King *Edwards* avail,  
 right he him get to be his stedfast man,  
 for gold or land his conquest might stand than.  
 We think by force he may not gotten be:  
 Else men forsooth by his escape may see.  
 And us deem they him in many diverse case.  
 We leave them thus, and speak of good *Wallace*.  
 In *Richartown* he would no longer bide,  
 for friends counsel, or ought that might betide.  
 And when they saw that it availed nought,  
 His purpose was to venge him if he mought,  
 In *Sutheron* blood, that had his elders slain;  
 They let him work his own will into plain.

*Richard* had three sons, as I you told,  
*Edam*, *Richard* and *Simon*, that were bold;  
*Edam* eldest, was grown into courage,  
 Reward, right fair, and eighteen years of age:  
 Large of person, righthardy, wise and wight.  
 Good King *Robert* in his time made him Knight.  
 Long time after in *Bruces* wars abade,  
 In *Englishmen* many good journey made.  
 This good Squyer with *Wallace* bowned to ryde,  
 And *Robert Boyde* which would no longer byde,  
 Under thirlage of sieges of *England*:  
 The false King he never had made band.  
*England* was there, near couising to *Wallace*,  
 When bode with him in many perilous place.

And Edward Little his sisters son so dear,  
Full well graithed into their armour clear :  
With their servants to *Richartown* they rode,  
To *Machlin Mure*, and short time there abode  
For friends them told was bunden in thirlage,  
That *Fenwick* sent was for the carriage :  
Within short time he will bring it to *Aire*,  
Out of *Carleil* they had received it there.  
That pleased *Wallace* in heart right greatumly,  
Wit ye they were a goodly company,  
Toward *Lowdown* they bowned them to ride,  
And in a shaw a little there beside,  
They lodged them, for it was near the night,  
To watch the way as goodly as they might.  
A good true *Scot* which Hostler-house held therid  
Under *Lowdown*, mine Author can declare,  
He saw them come, he went to them on hy,  
Both meat and dr nk he brought them privily,  
And to them told the carriage men in plain,  
Their fore-rider to *Aire* was post again:  
Left them to come with power of great avail,  
They crowed by then they were in *Annandale*.  
*Wallace* then said, We will not sojourn here,  
Nor change no weed, but our each days gear.  
At *Corffintown* the way was spilt that tide,  
For that same way behoved them to ride.  
And from the time that he off prison fare,  
Good summer weed dayly on him he bare  
Good light harness from that time used he ever  
For sudden strife from it he would not sever :  
An habergion under his gown he bare.

good steel-cap in his bonnet but mair :  
No gloves of plate, with cloath was covered well,  
his doublet a close collar of steel.  
His face he keeped, for it was ever bare,  
With his two hands, the which full worthy were,  
To his weed, if he came in a thrang,  
As no man then on foot might with him gang.  
Grown of strength, of power strong and sture,  
Terrible dints were fearful to endure.  
They trusted more of Wallace him alone,  
Than an hundred of England might be tane.  
These worthy Scots made there no tarrying,  
Lowdown-hill past, in the day dawning,  
Revised the place, and put their horse away,  
And thought to win, or never home to ga.  
Two scurriours sent to visit well the plain,  
But they right soon returned in again:  
Wallace said, That they were coming fast :  
Then to the ground allkneeling at the last,  
With humble hearts, praying with all their might,  
To God above, to help them in their right :  
They graithed them in harnessse hastily,  
There sonzied none good of that company :  
Then Wallace said, Here was my Father slain,  
And my brother, which do me meikel pain,  
How shall my self, or venged be but dread,  
The traitor is here the causer of the deed :  
Then heigh they all to bide with hearty will,  
That the power was taking Lowdown-hill,  
The Knight Fenwick convoyed the carriage,  
Which had on Scots made many shrewd voyage.

The Sun was risen, leiming over lands light,  
 The Englishmen saw that they came to the hight  
 Near him they rode, and soon the Scots saw :  
 He told his men, and laid to them on raw ,  
 Yonder is Wallace that escaped our prison,  
 He shal again be drawn through the town.  
 His head, I know, might better please the King,  
 Then gold, or land, or any earthly thing :  
 He made his servants bide with the carriage still,  
 Thought to demain the Scots at their own will,  
 Nine score he led in hardesse birnest bright,  
 And fifty were with Wallace in the right.  
 Unrebated the Sutheron were in wear.  
 And fast they came, full awful in effir.  
 A manner of dyke of stones they had made,  
 Narrowed the dyke wherethrogh the thickest rade  
 The Scots on foot took the gate them before,  
 The Sutheron saw their courage was the more :  
 In pridefull ire they thought over them to ride,  
 But otherwise it happened in that ride.  
 On either side, together fast they glade,  
 The Scots on foot, great room about them mad  
 with prunzing spears, through plates of finest stee  
 The Englishmen that thought to venge them we  
 On harest horse about them rudely rade,  
 That with unease upon their feet they bade.  
 Wallace the foremost in the birn he bare,  
 The grounden spear throughout his body share.  
 The shaft he shook it off the frushing tree,  
 Devoided it soon, since no better might be :  
 Drew swords then, both heavy, sharp and lang,  
 On either side full cruelly they dang.

ghting at once into that felon doubt,  
the Englishmen environed them about.  
rough force they thought out throgh them for to  
the Scots on foot that boldly could abide, (tides  
ith swords share throgh hause and habrick good,  
on the fields shot out the Sutherons blood.  
om horse and man, through harness birnest been,  
sore assailzie forsooth there might be seen :  
ey trusted no life, but to the latter end,  
so few folk, great noblenesse might be kend :  
gether bade defending them so fast,  
irst none dislever, while that the preass be past.  
e Englishmen that were right wise in wear,  
force ordained in sunder them to bear.  
eir chief Captain, as fierce as any Bear,  
rough maltalent, and very proper care,  
n a great horse into his glistring gear,  
ut over casts a felon asper spear.  
e Knight Fenwick that cruel was and keen,  
Wallace father he at the death had been,  
d of his brother that doughty was and dear.  
hen Wallace saw that false Knight was so neare,  
s courage grew in ire as a Lyon,  
him he ran, and frieks field bare down.  
he rode by, an acward stroak him ta,  
th thigh and arson in sunder made he ga.  
om the courser he fell on the far side.  
ith a sharp sword he strake him in that tide :  
e he was dead, a great preasse came so fast,  
er him to ground they bare Boyd at the last.  
Wallace was near, and turned in again,  
m to rescue, while he rose off the plain,

Wightly

Wightly did him wear, while he a sword bath tan  
Throghout the stour these two in fear are gan  
The remenant upon them followed fast,  
In their passage fel Sutheron made agast.  
*Adam Wallace*, the heir of Richartown,  
Strake on Benmount, a Squyer of renown,  
On the pesant, with his sword birmisht bare,  
The birmisht blade his halse in sunder share.  
The Englishmen saw their Chiftain was slain,  
Boldly abode, as men of meikle main.  
Rich horse ramping rushed fricks under feet,  
The Scots on foot made many lose the sweet.  
Wight men lighted themselves for to defend,  
Where Wallace came, their deed was little kend.  
The Sutheron part sore crushed was that tyde,  
That in that stour they might no longer byde.  
Wallace indeed he wrought right worthily,  
The Squyer Boyd, and all their Chevalry.  
The Englishmen took plain part for to flee:  
Little and Cleland made of their enemies die.  
On horse some part to strengths can them bow,  
To succoar them with many working wound.  
An hundred dead in field was leaved there,  
And three yeomen of Wallace dead, but mair.  
Two was of Kyle, and one of Cunninghamame,  
With Robert Boyd to Wallace came from hame  
Fourscore escaped from field on Sutheron side,  
The Scots in place that boldly could abide,  
Spoiling the field of gold and other gear,  
Harness and horte, which they needed in weir  
The English knaves they made the carriage leir  
To Clyd Forrest, while they were out of dread.

and band them fast with widdies sad and fair,  
In bowing trees, then hanged they them there.  
He spared none that able was for wear,  
At women and Priests he made them ay forbear.  
When this was done, to dinner soon they went,  
Of stuff and wine, that God had to them sent,  
A score of horse they wan that carriage bare,  
With victual and wines as meikle as they might  
And other stuff, char they of Carlile led. (fare,  
The Sutheron part out of the field they fled,  
With sorrow sought to the Castle of Aire,  
Before the Lord, and told him of that care,  
What good they left, and who in field was slain,  
Through wight Wallace that was of meikle main,  
And how he made all his servants hang.

The Perse said, If that Squyer last lang,  
Out of this Land he shal exile us clean,  
So despiteful in world was never seen.  
In our prison, here last when that he was,  
Ev'r slouthfully our Keeper let him passe.  
When this our hold I find well may not be:  
Vee must make bring our victual by the sea,  
But lose our men, it helpeth us right nought:  
Our Kin may ban that ever we hither sought.  
Leave I them now blaming their sory chance.

And more to speak of Scots-mens governance,  
When Wallace had well vanquisht into plain,  
That false tyrant that had his father slain,  
His brother als, which was a doughty Knight,  
Other good men before to death had dight:  
He cauf'd provide, and parted their victual,  
With stuff and horse, that was of great avail.

To friends about right privily they send,  
 The remanent fullgladly there they spend,  
 In Clyds wood they sojourned there three days,  
 No Sutheron was that durst persue those ways,  
 But he tholed death that came in their danger :  
 The word of Wallace walked far and near,

Wallace was known on life living again,  
 Though Englishmen thereof had meikle pain.  
 The Lord Perse to Glasgow could he fare,  
 With wise Lords, and held a counsell there.  
 When they were met, moe then ten thousand,  
 No Chiftain was that time durst take in hand  
 To lead a range, on Wallace to assail :

Asked about, What was their best counsel ?  
 Sir Aimer Wallange, that false traitor and strong  
 In Bothwell dweilt, and then was them among :  
 He said, My Lords, my counsel will I give,  
 But do ye not, from skaith ye may nor live :  
 Ye must take peace withouten carrying,  
 As for a time, we must send to the King.

The Perse said, Of our crews he will none,  
 An awfull Chiftain truely he is one.

He will do more in faich ere that he blin,  
 Sutheron to slay, he thinks it is no sin.

Sir Aimer said, crews it behoves you take,  
 While afterward for him provision make :  
 I know he will do meikle for his Kin,  
 Gentrice and truth ay rests him within.

C H A P. II. How the Englishmen took  
 peace with Wallace.

H Is Uncle Sir Rannald may take the band,  
 If he will not recognize all his land.

to the time that he this work had wrought.  
 Rannald was soon to their counsel brought :  
 ey charged him to make Wallace at peace,  
 he should passe to London ere he cease,  
 King Edward, and bide in his prison,  
 while they ask to have peace for his ransome.  
 Rannald said, Lords, ye know right well,  
 my counsel he will not do a deal :  
 worthy Kin despitefully ye slew,  
 prison then near to the death him drew :  
 is at large, and will not do for me,  
 ough ye therefore should now make me to die.  
 Asmer said, These Lords counsel to send  
 to the King, to make a final end  
 his conquest, forsooth he will it have,  
 Wallace nor thou may not this Countrey save :  
 ght Edward King get him for gold or land,  
 be his man, then might he keep Scotland.  
 e Lord bade cease, thou failest to that Knight,  
 more in truch then it is any right :  
 e wrong conquest our King desireth ay,  
 him and us, it shal be seen one day.  
 Wallace hath right, both force, and fair fortune,  
 heard how he escaped our prison.  
 us said the Lord, and prayed Sir Rannald fair,  
 make this peace, thou Sheriff art of Aire,  
 for a time we may advised be,  
 der my seal I shal be bound to thee :  
 e Englishmen, that they shal do him nought,  
 r to no Scots, but it be on them sought.  
 Rannald knew he might not them gain-stand,  
 Lord Persie he had received that band :

*Persie* was true, and ay of great avail,  
 Sober in peace, and cruel in battel,  
 Sir Rannald him bowned on the morn but bade  
*Wallace* to seek in *Clyds* Forrest he rade:  
 So him he fand bowning to his dinner.

when they have seen this good Knight coming ne  
 Well he them knew, and told them what he w  
 Marvell he had what made him hither passe,  
 Made him good chear of meats good and fine,  
 King Edward himself could not get better wine  
 Then they had there, vernage and vennison,  
 Of bestial into great fusion.

Then after meat, he shewed them of this deed,  
 How he had been into so mickle dread :  
 Nevoy, he said; work part of my counsell,  
 Take peace a while, and for the more avail :  
 But thou do so, forsooth thou hast great sin,  
 For they are set to undo all thy Kn.

Then *Wallace* said to good men him about,  
 I will no peace for all this felon doubt,  
 But if it please better to you then me.

The Squyer *Boyde* him answered soberly,  
 I give my counsel, ere this good Knight be slain  
 Take peace a while, although it do us pain,  
 So said *Adam* the heir of *Richartown*,  
 And *Cleland* als to their opinion.

With their consent *Wallace* this peace hath tane  
 As his Emg wroght, while ten moneths were ga  
 Their leave they took with sad comfort in plaid  
 Land God to brogh they shold meet whole agno  
*Boyde* and *Cleland* past to their places hame,  
*Adam Wallace*, to Richartown by name,

With Sir Rannald can *William Wallace* ride  
his household in *Corsbie* for to bide.  
His peace was cry'd in *August* moneth milde.  
These gods of battel, furious and wilde,  
*Mars* and *Juno* ever doth their businesse,  
Users of war, ay workers of wickednesse :  
And *Venus* als, which Goddesse is of love :  
And old *Saturn* his course for to approve.  
These four shewes of diverse complexion,  
Battell, Debate, Envy, and Destruction:  
Cannot deem of their melancholy,  
That *Wallace* could not well in *Corsbie* ly.  
Item had rather in travel for to be,  
Right sore he longed the town of *Aire* to see.

## C H A P. III. How Wallace flew the

Buckler-player in the town of *Aire*.

If *Rannald* past from home upon a day,  
Ffteen he took, and to the town went they :  
Covered his face, that no man might him knaw,  
Nothing he cared how few enemies him saw.  
Sober weed, disguised well were they,  
An *English-man* on the gate saw he play,  
The Scrimmage, a Buckler on his hand :  
*Wallace* near by in fellowship could stand :  
Rightly he said. *Scot*, darest thou not prieve ?  
*Wallace* said, Yea, so thou dare give me lieue.  
Smite on, he said, I defy thy Nation.

*Wallace* therewith hath tane him on the crown,  
Through buckler, brand, and through the harns also,  
Through the shoulder the sharp sword made he go.  
Rightly returned to his own men again,  
The women cry'd, Our Buckler-player is slain.

The

The man is dead, what needs words maire ?  
Feil men of arms about him sembled there.  
Eight score at once upon sixteen they set,  
But Wallace soon with the foremost hath met,  
With ire and will on the head hath him tane,  
Through the bright helm in sunder burst the bi  
Another breathly on the breast him bare,  
His birmishe blade throughout his body share.  
Great room he made, his men were fighting fal  
And many a groom they made full sore agast :  
For they were wight, and well used in wear,  
Of Englishmen right boldly down they bear :  
On their enemies great martyrdom they made,  
Their hardy Chiftain so well among them glade  
What Englishmen that bade into his gate,  
Contrare to Scotland, made never more debate  
Feil freeks on fold were felled under feet,  
Of Sutheron blood lay sticked on the street :  
New power came from the Castle that tide,  
Then Wallace fled, and drew toward a side.  
With right good will he would eschew surprise,  
For he in war was worthy, wight and wise.  
Harns and heads in sunder hew'd he fast,  
By force out through the thickest preasse he pa  
Wallace returned behinde his men again,  
At the rescue feil Sutheron hath he slain.  
His men all then he out of peril brought  
From their enemies, with al the power he moug  
Unto their horse they went but more abode,  
For danger then to Langlane-wood they rode:  
Twenty and nine they left into that stead,  
Of Sutheron men, that brittened were to dead

remenant again turned that tide,  
in this wood they durst not him abide:  
ward the town they drew with all their main,  
sing the peace they took before in plain.

Lord Persie in heart was greatly grieved,  
men suppressed again to him relieved,  
feil were dead into their armour clear,  
ee of his Kin that were to him full dear.  
en he heard tell of this their great grievance,  
self was cause of this mischievous chance,  
nning he made, though few Scots it kend.

Herald then to take Sir Rannald he send,  
to him told of their full sudden case,  
charged him to take severance of Wallace:  
ould him hold from Market, Town and Faire  
ere he might best be out of their repair.

Sutheron knew that it was wight Wallace,  
them overset into that sudden case:  
trews for this they would not break a deal.  
en Wallace had this chance eschewed well,  
n a night from Langlane home he rede,  
amber soon their residence they made:  
n the morn when that the day was light,  
Wallace forth went Sir Rannald the Knight,  
v him the writ that Lord Persie had sent:  
son, he said, this is my whole intent,  
thou wold grant, while that this trews were  
kaith to do to any in England born. (worn,  
where I passe dayly thou bide with me.

lace answered, Good Sir, that may not be:  
t loath I were, dear Uncle, you to grieve:  
I do nougnt, while time I take my leave.

And

And warn you als, ere that I from you passe.  
His Eme and he on this accorded was.

Wallace with him made his continuance,  
Ilk wight was blyth for to do him pleasance.  
In Corstie thus he rested them among,  
There seventeen days, suppose he thought it lo  
Though they him pleasd as a Primate or King  
Into his minde remained another thing.  
He saw his enemies Masters in this Region,  
Might not him please, though he were King w  
Thus leave I him with his dear friends stil, (cro  
Of Englishmen now speak some part I will.

*The end of the third Book.*



## THE FOURTH BOOK

### CHAP. I.

*How Wallace won the Peel of Gargunnock.*

**I**N September that humble moneth sweet,  
When by-past was of the Summer the heat  
Virtail and fruit are ryped in abundance,  
As GOD ordained to mans sustenance:  
*Sagittarius* with his asper bow,  
By each sign the verity to know,  
The changing course which makes great differ  
And leaves had lost their colour of pleasance:  
All worldly thing hath nought but a season,  
Both herb & fruit must from the hight come do  
In this ilk time a great counsell was set,  
In Glasgow town, where many masters met,

English Lords, to statute this Countrey,  
and charged they all Sheriffs there to be.  
*Rannald Crawford* behoved that time be there  
the through right was born Sheriff of *Aire* ;  
s dear Nevoy with him that time he took,  
*William Wallace*, as witness bears the book :  
t he no time should far be from his sight,  
e loved him with heart and all his might.  
They graithed them without longer abode,  
wallace some part before the Court out rode,  
vertook the childe, Sir *Rannalds* sum should lead  
ith him two men that worthy were indeed :  
ftly they rode while they the court should know  
suddenly that time himself he saw.

he *Persies* sum, in which great riches was :  
he horse was tyred, and might no further passe :  
ve men were charged to keep it well that tide,  
wo were on foot, and three on horse can ride,  
he Master-man at their servant can spear,  
Who ow the sum ? the truth to me you leare.  
he man answered withouten words mair,  
y Lord, he said, it is the Sheriffs of *Aire*.  
nce his it is, this horse shall with me gang,  
o serve our Lord, or else I think great wrang :  
hough a subject indeed would passe his Lord,  
is not leisom by no righteous record.

They cutted the brace, and let the harnessse faw :  
*Wallace* was near when he such robbery saw,  
e spake to them with manly countenance,  
fair form, he said but variance :  
e do us wrong, and it is time of peace,  
f such robbery it were good time to cease.

The Sutheron shrew in ire answer'd him to,  
 It shall be wrought as thou may'st see us do.  
 Thou gets no mends, what needs words mair  
 Sidly advised, Wallace remembred there  
 Of the promise he made his Eme before,  
 Reason him ruled, as then he did no more,  
 But palt awa y to meet his Eme again,  
 Seeing this reaff was moved with great pain:  
 The horle yet took they, for aventure might fai  
 Bound on the sum, then forth the way can call,  
 Their tyred sumner they left there on the plai  
 Wallace returned toward this Court again.  
 On the Mure side soon with his Eme he met,  
 And told how they the way had for him set:  
 And were not I was bound in my leadgeance,  
 We patted not thus for all the gold in France  
 The horse they left which should your harnel  
 Sir Rannald said, That is but little dear: ( b  
 We may get horse, and other things in plain,  
 If men be lost we get them never again.  
 Wallace then said as wisely, God me save,  
 Of this great miss amends shall I have:  
 And neither let for peace, nor yet pleasance,  
 With witnesse here, I give up my leadgeance,  
 For cowardly you are like to lose the right,  
 Soon after then your own death will be dight  
 In wrath therewith suddenly from hitt he w  
 Sir Rannald was wise, and cast in his intent,  
 And said, I will byde at the Meirns all night,  
 So Englishmen of us shall deem no untight:  
 If any be dead before us upon cale,  
 Then we in law may bide the righteousnesse.

s lodging took, at the *Meirns* still he bade,  
All great mourning for his Nevoy he made:  
It all for nought, What might it him avail  
into war he wrought not his counsel.

*Wallace* rode forth, with his two yeomen past,  
The summer-man he followed wonder fast:

*Cathcart* he over-hyed them again,  
Then knew they well that it was he in plain,  
Horse and weed had argued them before,  
And then to them returned withouten more?  
*Wallace* to ground from his Courser can glyde,  
Birniscle brand he braided out that tyde:  
The master-man with so good will strake he,  
With hat and head in sunder made he flee:  
Other fast upon the face he gave,

dead on ground but mercy soon him drave;  
The third he hit with great yre in that stead,  
By on the field he hath him left for dead:

*Wallace* slew three, by that his yeomen wight  
The other two derly to death had dight:  
Then spuilyed they the harness ere they wend,  
Silver and gold they got enough to spend.

Leuels they took the best were chosen there,  
Good horse and gear, then on their way can fare:  
*Ben Wallace* said, At some strength would I be,  
Over *Clyde* that time was a good bridge of tree,  
Either they past in all their goodly might,  
The day was gone and coming was the night,  
They durst not well necht still by *Glasgow* byde;  
The *Lennox* he took purpose to ride.

And so he did, then lo g'd there that night,  
They best might, while that the day was light:

To an Hostillarie he went and sojourn'd there,  
 With true Scots that his near friends were.  
 The Counsell met right gladly on the morn,  
 But feil tydings were brought to Persie beforne  
 His men were slain, his treasure als was reft,  
 Witch feil Scots, and them no Jewels left :  
 They deemed about of that derf doubtfull case  
 The Sutheron said, Forlooth it is Wallace.  
 The Sheriffs Court was coming to the Town,  
 And he was one for Scot of most renown.  
 They gart seek Sir Rannald in that rage,  
 But he was still then at his Harbarage.  
 Some wise men said, thereof nothing he kend,  
 The men were slain here at the towns end.  
 Sir Rannald came by nine houres of the day,  
 Before the Persie, and his men brought were they w  
 They followed him of felonyn that was wroug  
 The assyse to him of this could say right noug  
 They deemed about thereof that felon case,  
 Before the Judge there he denied Wallace :  
 And so he might, he wist not where he was.  
 From this Counsel my purpose is to passe.

**O**f Wallace to speak in wildernesse so wide,  
 The Lord God be his governour and guid  
 Still at that place four days he sojourned hail,  
 When tydings came to him from that Counsel.  
 Then statute they in each stead of the West,  
 In these bounds Wallace should have no rest.  
 His dear Uncle a great oirth made him swear,  
 That he but leave, no friend ship should him b  
 And many other, full wo was that day,  
 And Robert Boyde stole off the town away :

and Cleland als, before with him had been,  
they had far rather see him with their een,  
living on life, as they knew him before,  
men of pure gold a million and more.

They weeped sore, and said, Our Lord is gone,  
amongst his foes is set all him alone.

Then Cleland said, False Fortune changes fast,  
that God since we with him had ever past.

Edward Little to Annandaile is went,  
and wist right nought of this new judgement :  
William Wallace bode still in Richartown,  
tell it thus with Wallace of renowne  
with his power parted marvelously,  
fortune of chance over-turnd doubly.

their pireous moan as then could not be bet,  
they wist no whit wher that they should him get,  
left the place where he in lodging lay :

Earle Malcome he went upon a day :  
the Lennox whole he held into his hand,  
King Edward then had he not made band :  
land was strait and masterfull to win,  
and men of armes that time was it within :  
Lord was traist, the men sikker and true,  
in weak power they durst him nor persue.  
But glad he was of Wallace company,  
comded him fair with worship reverently :  
his own will desired if he would  
bide there still, Master of his households,  
all his men he should whole Chifain be,  
ace answered, It were enough for me,  
not bide, my mindē is set on plain,  
cken to be, or else to die in pain.

Our West-Countrey, their statute is so strang,  
Into the North my purpose is to gang.

*Steven of Ireland* into the *Lennox* was,  
And wight *Wallace* ordained him to passe,  
And others als that born was of *Argile*.

*Wallace* still there made residence awhile,  
While men it wist, and sembled soon him till :  
He charged none, but at their own good will.  
Though they were strangers, he could not the  
But received them all in his wars to lead. (drew

Some part of them was then in *Ireland* born,  
That *Mackfadzean* had exiled out beforne :  
*King Edwards* man he was sworn of *Ireland*,  
Of right low birth, suppose he took in hand.  
To *Wallace* there came one that heght *Fawdon*,

Of melancholy, and evil of complexion,  
Heavy of stature, and dour countenance,  
Sorrowfull was ay, in dread without pleasance.

*Wallace* received what men would come him till  
The bodily oath they made him with good will,  
Before the Earle, all in one concord,

And him received as their Captain and Lord.  
His specisll men that came with him from hame,

The one heght *Gray*, the other *Kairly* by name,

In his service came first in all their main,  
To *Lowdowry-hill*, where that *Fenwick* was slain  
He them commanded ay next him to pursue,

For he them kend right hardy, wise, and true,

His leave he took right on a fair manner,  
The good Earle then he bade him gifes feir :

*Wallace* would none, but gave of his feil syse,  
To poor and rich on a goodly wife,

umble he was, hardy, wise, and free,  
 And of riches he held no property.  
 Honour and worship he was a mirrour kende,  
 As he of gold had abundantly to spend:  
 Upon his foes he wan it worthy.  
 Thus Wallace past, and his good Chevalry,  
 Wher he had of likely men at wage,  
 Through the Lennox he led them with courage,  
 About Lekkie he lodged them in a vaile,  
 Strength there was which they thought to assaile.  
 In Gargunnock there bigged was a Peel,  
 That stuffed was with men and victual well,  
 Within a dyke, close chamber, and a hall,  
 Captain thereof to name height Thirlwall.  
 They led Wallace where that this bigged was,  
 Ought to essay, further ere he would passe:  
 So spyes he sent to visie all the Land,  
 Right loath he was the thing to take in hand,  
 The which by force that should go him again,  
 Where he had through aventure be slain:  
 Their men went forth when it was large mid-night  
 Out the house they spye all at right.  
 The watch-men heavy were, and fallen asleep,  
 The bridge was drawn, that the entry should keep:  
 Labourers late recklesly went in,  
 These men returned withouten noise or din,  
 Their Master, and told what they had seen:  
 In grait bed he soon these men of arms keen,  
 By on foot unto the house they sought,  
 Entered in, for letting had they nought.  
 Right men essayed with all their busie cure,  
 The bar was drawn athort the door;



But they might not it break out of the wa.  
*Wallace* was grieved when he such carry saw :  
 Some part annoyed wrathly to it he went,  
 By force of hands it raised out of the sprent.  
 Three ells of breadth als of the wall pulled out,  
 Then marvelled all his men that were about,  
 How he did more then twenty of them might,  
 Then with his foot the gate he stakē up right,  
 While brace and bands he bursted all at anes :  
 Frayedly they rose that were within those wands.  
 A watch-man had a fellow staff of steel,  
 At *Wallace* stakē, but he kept him right well,  
 Rudely from him he refc it in the thrang.  
 Dang out his brains, then in the dyke him flang.  
 The remanent by that were on their feet,  
 Thus *Wallace* soon can with the Captain meet,  
 The staff he had heavy, and forged new,  
 With that *Wallace* upon the head him drew,  
 While bone and brain all in sunder yeed.  
 His men entred, that worthy were indeed,  
 In hands hint, and sticked all the lave:  
*Wallace* commanded, they should no wear mens sa  
 Twenty and two they sticked in that stead.  
 Women and bairns, when that the men were de  
 He caus'd be tane, and kept in close full well,  
 That they thereout might have thereof no feil.  
 The dead bodies they put soon out of sight,  
 Took up the bridge ere that the day was light,  
 In that place bode four days ere he would passe  
 Wist none thereout how that the manner was ;  
 Spoiled that stead and took them gaining gear,  
 Jewels and gold away with them they bear.

When he thought time, they ished in the night,  
 To the next wood they went with all their might:  
 The Captains wife, women, and children three,  
 Wher where they would, for Wallace left them free.  
 That Forrest he liked not to bide,  
 They bowned them over Forth to ride:  
 The Mosse was strong, to ride it was no boot.  
 Wallace was wight, and lighted on his foot:  
 Few horse they had, little thes: of they ronght,  
 To save their lives, feil strengths oft they sought.  
 Steven of Ireland was their guide that night,  
 Toward Kinkardin, syn rested there at right,  
 In that Forrest which was both long and wyde,  
 Which from the Mosse grew to the vwater side:  
 After the Sun, Wallace vvalked about  
 Upon Teth side, vvhile he savv many a rout  
 Of vwild beasts vvavering in vwood and plain:  
 Soon at a shot a great Hart hath he slain.  
 Flevv fire off flint, and graithed therest right,  
 Suddenly their fresh Vennison they dight:  
 Victual they had, both bread and vvine so clear,  
 With o her stuff enough at their dinneir.  
 The stoff of steel he gave Keirly to keep,  
 Then past they over the water of Teth so deep,  
 Into Strashern they entred suddenly,  
 In covert past ere Sutheron should them spy:  
 Whom that they found of Scotlands aduersours,  
 Without respect vvas come their fatal hours.  
 Whom ever they met vvas at the English fay,  
 They flew all dovn, vwithoutten more delay.  
 They spared none that vwas of English blood,  
 To death he yeed, though he vvere never so good.

This was the grace that Wallace to them gave :  
 They saved none, Knight, Squyer, nor yet knave  
 But wasted all by worthinesse of wear.  
 Of that party that might bear bow or spear.  
 Some part by slight, some part by force they slew  
 But Wallace thought they wasted never anew.  
 Silver they took, and als gold as they fand,  
 Other good gear full lightly red from hand.  
 Cutted throats, syn in Peit-pots them cast,  
 Put out of sight, for that they thought was best  
 At the Black-furd as they should then passe o'er.  
 A Squyer came, and with him beirns four,  
 To Down should ride, and weind that they ha  
 All Englishmen, that he before had seen : (be  
 Tydings to speir, he hoved them among :  
 Wallace therewith a good sword out he swong,  
 Upon his head he strake with so great ire,  
 Through bone and brain in sunder strake the lyre  
 The other four in hands soon were hint,  
 Derly to death sticked ere they would stint.  
 The horse they took, and what they liked best,  
 Spoiled them bare, syn in a bog them kest,  
 Of this matter no more tarry they made,  
 But forth their way passed without abade,  
 These warlike Scots all with one consent. (went  
 So North over Erne out through the land they  
 In Methwin wood, their lodging took that night  
 Upon the morn when that the day was light,  
 Wallace rose up, and went to the Forrest side,  
 Where that he saw some wilde beasts abide,  
 Of wilde and tame walking abundantly :  
 Then Wallace said, This Countrey liketh me,

Wear

Dear men may do with food that they should have  
 want they meat, they feck not for the lave.  
 Dainty fare *Wallace* took never keep,  
 but as it came, welcome was meat and sleep.  
 Sometime he had great sufficience within,  
 now want, now have, now loss, now sometime win,  
 now light, now sad, now blyth, and now in baile;  
 now haste, now hurt, now sorrow, and now haile,  
 now waile and weil, now cold weather, now heat:  
 now moist, now drouth, & wav'ring wind, now wet  
 fares with him for *Scotlands* right full even,  
 fell debate, seven years and moneths seven.  
 When he wan peace, and left *Scotland* in plain,  
 when *Englishmen* made new conquest again.  
 In frustrate terms I will not tarry lang.

*Wallace* again unto his men can gang,  
 and said, Here is a land of great bundance,  
 thanked be GOD of his hie purveyance.  
 even of you feirs, graith soon, and go with me;  
 Right sore I lang Saint Johnstoun for to see.

C H A P. II. How *Wallace* past to Saint Johnstoun, and slew the Captain, and wan Kintlevin.  
 Steven of Ireland, as GOD of heaven thee save,  
 Maister and leader I make thee of the leave :  
 Keep well my men, let none out of thy sight,  
 While I gang hither, and come with all my might,  
 Bide we seven days into this Forrest strong,  
 Ye may get food, suppose I dwel so long:  
 Some part ye have, and GOD will send you mair.  
 Thus turned he, and to the town can fare :  
 The Maire kepted the port of the village,  
*Wallace* knew well, and sent him his message.

The Mair was brought, saw him a goodly man,  
 Right reverently he hath received him than.  
 At him he asked, All Scots if that ye be.  
*Wallace* said, Yea, and it is peace trow me.  
 I grant, he said, that likes us wonder well,  
 True men of peace must ay some friendship feel.  
 What is your name? I pray you tell me it.  
*William Malcome*, he said, since ye would wit;  
 In *Errick Forrest* hath my winning been,  
 There was I born among the shawes sheen.  
 Now I desire this North-land for to see,  
 Where I might find better dwelling for me.  
 The Mair said, Sir, I ask it for none ill,  
 But fel sydings oft times is brought us till,  
 Of one *Wallace*, that born was in the West,  
 Our Kings men he holds at great unrest :  
 Martyrs them down, great pity is to see,  
 Out of the crews forsooth I trow he be.  
*Wallace* said then, we hear speak of that man,  
 Tydings to you of him tell nought I can.  
 For him he gart an Innes well graithed be,  
 Where none should come but his own men and b  
 The Stewart *Keirly* brought them in fusion,  
 Good things enough, the best was in the town.  
 Als *Englishmen* to drinking would him call,  
 And commonly he dealt not therewithall.  
 In their presence he spended reasonably,  
 Yet for himself he psyd abundantly :  
 On Scots men he spended mickle good,  
 None with his will upon the *Sutheron* blood.  
 Soon he conceived in his wit privily,  
 Into that town who was of most party.

James Butler, an aged cruel Knight,  
kept Kinclavin, a Castle wonder wight.  
son Sir John, that dwelt into that town,  
under Captain to Sir Gerard Heron;

the women als he visit at the last,  
and so on one his eyes began to cast,  
the South-gate a felon ferlie fair :  
Wallace to her made privately reprise,

tell it thus, from the town ere he past,  
an accord they happened at the last,  
Wallace wих her in secret made him glad :  
Gheron wist not that he such pleasance had.

it on the night he would say to himself,  
this is far worse then any pain of hell,  
not thus with wrong these devils brook our Land,  
and I with force may not against them stand :

to take this town, my power is too small,  
great peril als of my life may befall :  
let it on fire it will undo my tell,  
or lose my men, there is no more to tell.

the gates are closed, the dykes are deep withall,  
though I would swim, forsooth they cannot all,  
his matter here, therefore I will let slide,  
or at this time I may no longer bide.

all men him told the Captain was to passe  
ome to Kinclavin, whereof right glad he was,  
his leave he took at Heirs of the town,  
to Meshwin-wood right gladly made them bown

his horn he hint, and blythly bowned to blaw :  
his men him heard, and there soon can they draw.  
right blyth he was, for they were hail and feir,  
Any at him of sy dings would not speir.

He them commanded for to make ready fast,  
 In good array out of the wood they past,  
 Toward Kinclavin they bowned them that tide  
 Then in the vaile that near was them beside,  
 Fast upon Tay his bushment can he draw,  
 In a dern wood he stelled them on raw.  
 Set scurriours out the Countrey to espy,  
 But soon ere noon there came fore riders by:  
 The watch turned to see what was his will.  
 He them commanded in covert hold them still :  
 And we skail forth, the house will knowledge ha  
 And that may soon be warning to the lave.  
 All force in war doth nougħt but grievance.  
*Wallace* was few, but happy was his chance :  
 Made him feil syse his aduersours to win.  
 By that the Court of *Englishmen* came in :  
 Four-score and ten well graithed in their gear,  
 Harness on horse, as likely men of wear.  
*Wallace* saw well that number was no mo,  
 He thanked God, and then the field can to.  
 The *English* marvel'd greatly what they shold be  
 But fra they saw, they made them for naellie :  
 In rest they cast sharp spears in that tide,  
 In over they thought out over the *Scots* to ride.  
*Wallace* and his went over them again,  
 At the first rush feil *Sutheron* were slain :  
*Wallace* strake one with his good spear of steel,  
 Throughout the coast that shaft crushed ilk deal.  
 A burnisht brand in haste then hint he out,  
 Thrice upon foot he throng through all the row.  
 Stern horse they sticked, shold men of arms bear,  
 In a wood few was syse men of wear.

Butler lighted himself for to defend.

Vich men of arms, which were full worthy knell,  
On either side feil frieks were fighting fast,  
The Captain bade, though he was sore agist :  
Out of the Scots through worthineste they slew,  
Wallace was wo, and toward him he drew :  
His men then dred, the Butler bold and keen,  
On him he fought with yre and proper teen,  
Upon the head he stake in maltalent,  
The birnisch blade throughout his basnet went,  
Both bone and brain he bursted through his weed :  
Thus Wallace hand delivered them of that dreads.  
Yet feil on fold was fighting fellonly,  
Steven of Ireland, and all the Chevalry,  
To that stour did worthily and well,  
And Keirly als with his good staff of steel.  
The Englishmen fra their Chifain was slain,  
They lett the field, and fled in all their main.  
Three score wer slain ere they wold leave the stead,  
The heeand folk they wist of no remeas ;  
But take the house, they fled in all their might.  
The Scots followed, that worthy were and wight,  
Few men of fence was left that place to keep.  
Women and Priests upon the wall can weep,  
For well they weined the heears was their Lord,  
To take them in, they made them ready ford :  
Let down the bridge, cast up the gates wide,  
The frayed folk entred, that durst not bide :  
Good Wallace ever followed them so fast,  
While in the house he entred at the last.  
The gate he wore, while coming was the rout,  
Of English and Scots he held no man thereout,

The Englishmen that winned in that stead,  
Withouten grace they brittened them to dead. The  
The Captains wife, women, and Priests two, Befor  
And young children, forsooth they saved no man. The  
Held them in close after this sudden case, Har  
Ere Sutheron men should siedge them in that place. To  
Took up the bridge, and gates closed fast, Ath  
The dead bodies out of sight the cau'd cast, Tow  
Within the house and without that were dead:  
Five of his own to bury he cau'd lead.

In that Castle seven dayes still bode he.

In every night they spoiled busily:

To Short wood shawes led wines and viual wigh  
And housshold gear, both gold and silver bright.  
Women, and they to whom he granted grace,  
When he thought time, they put out of the place  
When they had tane what liked them to have,  
Strake down the gate, and set on fire the lave.  
Out of the windows the stanchers all they drew,  
Full great iron wark into the water threw.

Buridin doors and locks in their ire,

All work of tree they burnt into the fire.

Spilt what they might, brake brig & balwark down.

To Shortwood shaws in haste they made thē bowys

Choosed a strength, wher they their lodging made

In good effect a while still there he bade,

Yet in the town of this no wit had they.

The countrey folk, when it was light of day,

Great smoak saw rise, and to Kinlewin they fough

Put wals & stone, more good there found they not

The Captains wife to Saint Johnstoun she yeed,

Acc to Sir Gerard told this felon deed,

Als to her son what hapned was by case :  
 Then deemed they all that it was wight *Wallace*,  
 Before time there he spye bad the town :  
 Then charged they all should be ready bown,  
 Harnest on horse into their armour clear,  
 To seek *Wallace*, they went all forth in fear :  
 A thousand men well garnisht for the weir,  
 Toward the wood, right awfull in effeir.

C H A P. III. *Short-wood-Shawes.*

**T**O Short-wood-shaw, and set it all about,  
 With five stails, that stalwart were and stout.  
 The sixt they made a felon range to lead,  
 Where *Wallace* was full worthy ay indeed.  
 The strength they took, and bade them hold it still,  
 On every side assaileye who so will.  
 Sir John Butler into that Forrest went,  
 With two hundred, sore moved in his intent,  
 His fathers death to venge him if he mought,  
 To *Wallace* soon with men of arms he sought :  
 A Cleugh there was, whereof a streng they made  
 With thortour trees, and boldly there abode :  
 From the one side they might iſh to the plain,  
 Then thorogh the wood to the strength pass again.  
 Twenty he had that noble Archers were,  
 Against seven score of English Bow-men faire,  
 Three score of spears near hand them bode ful right,  
 If Scots issued to help them at their might :  
 On *Wallace* set a bicker bold and keen :  
 A bow he bare, was big, and well beſeen :  
 And arrows als, both sharp and lang with aw,  
 No man there was that *Wallace* bow could draw :  
 Right strong he was, and in full sober gear,  
 Boldly he shot among those men of wear.

An angle head into the hooks he drew,  
 Then at one shot, the foremost he slew.  
*English Archers* that hardy were and wight,  
 Against the *Scots* bickered with all their might.  
 Their awfull shot was fellon for to bide :  
 Of *Wallace* men they wounded fel that tide.  
 Few of them was sikker of archery :  
 Better they were, and they got even party,  
 In field to bide, either with sword or spear.  
*Wallace* perceived his men took mickle dear :  
 He gart them change, and stand not in that stead.  
 He cast always to save them from the dead.  
 Full great travel upon himself took he,  
 Of *Sutheron Archers* fel men gart he die.  
 Of *Long-castle-Shire bow-men* were in that place,  
 A sore Archer ay waited on *Wallace* :  
 At an open where he used to repair,  
 At him he drew a sikker shot and fair,  
 Under the chin through a Collar of steel,  
 On the left side, and hurt his halse some deal :  
 Astonied he was, but not greatly agast,  
*Wallace* him saw, and followed him full fast,  
 And in the turning with good will hach him cane  
 Upon the craig, in sunder broke the bane,  
 Then fel of them no friendship with him fand,  
 Fifteen that day he shot dead with his hand.  
 By that his arrows wasted were and gone,  
 The *English Archers* forsooth they wanted none  
 Out-with they were their power to renew,  
 On every side they could to them pursue.  
*William Loran* came with his housteous stail,  
 Out of *Gowry*, on *Wallace* to assaile :

Nevoy he was, as it was known plain,  
To the Butler before that they had slain :  
To venge his Emme, he came with all his might,  
Three hundred led of men in arms bright,  
To lead the range, on foot he made him ford.  
Wallace to God his confidence couth remord,  
Then comfort them with manly countenance :  
Ye see, he said, good Sirs, their ordinance :  
Here is no choise, but either do or die,  
We have the right, the happier may it be,  
That we shall scape by grace out of this Land;  
*Loran* by that was ready at his hand:  
By this it was afternoon of the day :  
Feil men of wit to counsell soon yeed they,  
The *Sutheron* cast sharply on every side,  
He saw the wood was neither long nor wide.  
Lightly they said, He shou'd it hold so lang,  
Five hundred made on foot through it to gang,  
Sad men of, arms that eager were of will,  
About the *Scots* with many shout full shril,  
With bow and spear, and swords stiff of steel,  
Oneither side no friendship could they feel.  
Wallace in ire a buiry brand can draw,  
Where feil *Sutheron* were sembled on a raw,  
To fend his men with his dear worthy hand :  
The folk were fey that he before him fand :  
Through the thickest of the great preasse he past,  
Upon his enemies he went wonder fast,  
Against his dints no weeds might avail,  
Whom so he hit was dead withoutten fail,  
Of the fiercest full braithly dang he down,  
Before the *Scots* that were of great renown.

To hold the strength they prest with al their might,  
 Then *Englishmen* that worthy were and wight,  
 Sir John Butler relieved in again,  
 Sundered the *Scots*, and did them mickle pain,  
 The *Loran* als that cruel was and keen,  
 A sore essay fofooth there might be seen.  
 Then at the strength they might no longer bide,  
 The range so strong came upon either side.  
 In the thickest wood they made their fell defence  
 Against their foes so full of violence :  
 Right fel *Sutheron* there left their life in wed,  
 To a new strength *Wallace* and his men fled :  
 On his aduersares they made full fell debate,  
 To help themselves, none other succour they wate  
 The *Sutheron* als were funderd then in twin,  
 But they again together soon can win.  
 Full subtilly their ordinance they made,  
 To range again they bowned but more abide.  
 The *Scots* were hurt, and part of them were slayn  
 Then *Wallace* said, We labour all in vain :  
 To slay Commons it helps us right nought,  
 But their Chiftains that have them hither brought  
 Might we work so, that one of them were slayn  
 So sore essay they could not get again :  
 By this the host approaching was full near,  
 Thus they them held full manly upon stear.  
 When *Wallace* saw the *Sutheron* were at hand,  
 Him thought no time longer for to stand.  
 Right manfully he graithed hath his gear,  
 Sadly he went against these men of wear :  
 Throughout the stour full fast fighting he sough  
 With Gods grace to venge him if he mought :

ight upon the *Butler*, awfully strak he,  
At seguard he got under a bowing tree,  
The branch in two he strake above his head.  
To the ground he felled him in that stead.  
The whole power upon him came so fast,  
That they by force rescued him at the last.  
*Loran* was wo, and thither fast can draw,  
Wallace returned so suddenly he him saw,  
But at a side full fast to him he yeed,  
He got no girth for all his birmisht weed : -  
With yre him strake on his gorget of steel,  
The trenching blade it pierced every deal :  
Through plate and stuff might not against it stand,  
Everly to death he left him on the land.  
Jim have they lost, though *Sutherland* had it sworn,  
Or his craig-bone was all in sunder shorn.  
The worthy *Scots* did nobly that day,  
About *Wallace* while he was won away.  
He took the strength against their foes will,  
Abundantly in bargan bade them still.  
He scry soon rose the bold *Loran* was dead,  
Gerard Heroun tranooyted to that stead.  
And all the host assembled him about :  
At the north side then *Wallace* issued out.  
With his good men, and bowned them to go,  
Thanking great GOD that they were parted so.  
Even of his men that day to death were dight :  
To Cargill wood they went that self same night,  
The field left of the *Sutherland* six score,  
And *Loran* als, that mourning was the more.  
He range in haste they raised soon again :  
But when they saw their travell was in vain.

When

When it was past, full mickle moan they made,  
 To ryde the wood, both vale, flonk, and flaid ;  
 For Butlers gold, Wallace took care before,  
 But they found nocht, would they seek evermair.  
 His horse they got, but nought else of his gear :  
 With dolefull moan return'd these men of wear,  
 To Saint Johnstoun, with sorrow and great care,  
 Of Wallace forth, me likes to speak no mair.  
 The seconnd night the Scots could them draw,  
 Right privately again to Short-wood-shaw :  
 Took up their good which was put out of sight,  
 Cloathing and stuff, both gold and silver bright.  
 Upon their feet, for horse was tane them fro,  
 Ere the sun rose, to Methwen-wood can go,  
 The two days over their lodging still they made,  
 On the third night they moved but more abade.

CHAP. IV. How Wallace was sold to the  
 Englishmen by his Lemman.

TO Elchok Park full suddenly they went,  
 There in that strength to bide was his intent.  
 Then Wallace said, He would go to the town,  
 Arrayed him well into a Priests gown.  
 Into Saint Johnstoun disguised can he fare,  
 To this Woman, the which he spake of aye :  
 Of his presence she right rejoiced was,  
 And ay in dread how he away should passe.  
 He sojourn'd there from noon was of the day,  
 While near the night, ere that he went his way,  
 He crysted her when he should come again,  
 On the third day, then was she wonder fain :  
 Yet he was seen with enemies as he yeed :  
 To Sir Gerard they told of all his deed :

ed to the *Butler* that would have wroken been;  
en they caſd take that woman fair and ſheen,  
caſed her ſore of reſet into that place :

ll oft ſhe ſwore, that ſhe knew not *Wallace*.

en *Butler* ſaid, We wot well it was he,  
d but thou tell, in bail-fire thou ſhalt die.

thou wil help to bring yon *Rebald* down,  
e ſhal thee make a Lady of renown.

ey gave to her both gold and ſilver bright :  
d laid, She ſhould be wedded to a Knight,  
hom ſhe deſired, that was but mariage.

uſtempted they her through counſel & great wage  
at ſhe them told what night he ſhould be there,  
en they were glad, for they deſir'd no mair,  
all *Scotland* but *Wallace* at their will.

us ordained they that pointment to fulfill :

il men of arms they graithed hauily,  
keep the gates, wight *Wallace* to espy.

the ſet tryſt, he entred in the town,

tting nothing of all this false treaſouns

her chamber he went but more abode,

e welcomed him, and full great pleſance made.

hat that they wrought, I cannot graithly ſay,

ight unperfext I am of *Venus* play :

hauily he bowned him to gang,

en ſhe him took, and askt, If he thought lang ?

e asked him, that night with her to bide.

on he ſaid, Nay, for chance that may betide :

y men are leſt at miſrule all for me,

ay not ſleep this night while I them ſee.

en weeped ſhe, and ſaid full oft, Alace,

hat I was made, wo worth the cursed caſe.

Now have I lost the best man living is :  
O feeble mind, to do so foul a misse !  
O waried wit, wicked, and variance,  
That me hath brought in this mischievous chan  
Alace, she said, in world that I was wrought,  
If all this pain on my self might be brought.  
I have served to be burnt in a gleid.

Wher *Wallace* saw she near from wit couth we  
In his arms he caught her soberly,  
Who hath done ought, he said, dear heart, have  
No, I, quoth she, have falsly wrought this tra  
I have you sold, right now ye shal be slain.  
She told to him her treason to an end,  
As I have said, what needs more legend ?  
At her he askt, If she fore-thought it sore :  
Yea, Sir, she said, and shall do evermore.  
My waried wierd in world I must fulfill,  
To mend this misse, I would burn on a hill.  
He comfort her, and bade her have no dread,  
I will, he said, have some part of thy weed.  
Her gown on him he took, and courches als,  
Wil God, I shall escape this treason false.  
I thee forgive, withoutten words mair :  
He kisled her, then took his leave to fare.  
His buirly-brand helped him oft in need,  
Right privately hid it under his weed.  
To the South-gate the gainest way he drew,  
Where that he found of armed men anew,  
To them he told, dissimulate in countenance,  
To the chamber, where he was in perchance,  
Speed fast, he said, *Wallace* is locked in.  
For him they sought withoutten noise or din.

that same house about they can him cast,  
out of the gate then Wallace got full fast.  
right glad in heart when that he was without :  
ight fast he yeed, a sture pace and stout.  
two men beheld, and said, We will go see :  
stalwart Quean, forsooth, yen seems to be.  
They folow'd him throgh the south inch they two.  
When Wallace saw with them there came no mo,  
again he turned, and hath the formest slain :  
the other fled, then Wallace with great main,  
pon the head with his sword hath him tane,  
left them both dead, then to the strength is gane;  
is men he got, right glad when they him saw,  
to their defence in haste he cauf'd them draw :  
evoyded him soon out of the womans weed.  
thus escaped be out of this felon dread.

*The end of the Fourth Book.*



## THE FIFTH BOOK.

### CHAP. I.

How Wallace escaped out of Saint-Johnstoun, and  
past to Elchok Park, and how he flew Fawdown.

**T**He dark Region appeared wonder fast,  
In November, when October was past :  
The days fall through right course waxed  
to banishe men, that is no great comfort, (short  
with their power to leir place that worths gang,  
cavy they think when that the night is lang :

*Thus*

Thus Wallace saw the nights messenger,  
*Phœbus* had lost his fiery brands clear :  
 Out of the Wood they durst not turn that tyde  
 For adversaries that in their way would byde.

Wallace then told anew, were on his hand,  
 The English-men were of the town command :  
 The door brake they wher they trowd Wallace was  
 When they him missed, they bowned hence to pass  
 In this great noise the woman got away,  
 But to what stead, I cannot graithly say.

The Sutheron sought right sadly for that stead,  
 Throgh the south-inch, & found their two mē dead.  
 They knew by that Wallace was in the strength,  
 About the Park they set on breadch and length,  
 With six hundred well graithed in their arms ;  
 All likely men to wreak them of their harms.

An hundred men charged in arms strong,  
 To keep an Hound, that they had them among :  
 In Gelderland there was that bratchet bred,  
 Sikker of scent, to follow them that fled.

She was so used in *Eske* and *Liddesdale*,  
 While she had blood, no fleeing might availe.  
 Then said they all, Wallace might not away,  
 He should be theirs, for ought that he do may.

The host they left in diverse parts that tyde,

Sir Gerard Heroun in the stail can byde :

Sir John Butler the range he took him till,  
 With three hundred which were of hardy will,  
 Into the wood upon Wallace they yeed,  
 The worthy Scots that were in meikel dread,  
 Sought to a place, for to have issued out,  
 And saw the stail environed them about.

gain they went with hideous stroaks and strong,  
reat noise and din was raised them among :  
heir cruel death right marveilous to ken,  
here fourty marcht against three hundred men.  
wallace so well upon him took that tyde,  
hrough the great preas a way he made full wide  
elping the *Scots* with his dear worthy hand :  
eil foe men he left fey upon the land.  
et Wallace lost fifteen into that stead,  
nd fourty men of *Sutherland* there vvas dead ;  
he *Butlers* folk so frusched vvere indeed.  
he hardy *Scots* to the strengths throgh they yeed  
pon *Tay* side they hasted them full fast,  
vwill they vvere the vwater to have past.  
etter him thought in peril for to be  
pon the land, then vviffully to see  
is men to drovvn, vvhene rescue might be none :  
gain in yre to the field are they gone.  
utler by then had put his men in array,  
n them he set with hardy avvful essay,  
n either side with vweapons stiff of steel.  
allace again no friendship let them feel,  
ut do or die, they vvisit no more succour.  
hus fend they long into that stalwart stour,  
he *Scots* Chiftain vvas young and in a rage,  
sed in vvar, and fights vvith high courage :  
e savv his men of *Sutherland* take such vvrang,  
hem to revenge all dreadlesse he did gang :  
or many of them vvere bleeding vvonder fare,  
e could not see no help appearing there.  
ut if their Chiftain vvere put out of their gate,  
e brim *Butler* so boldly made debate :

Through

Through the great preass, right fast to him  
His awfull dead avenge it if he mought. (sough  
Under an oak with men about him set,  
*Wallace* might not a great stroak on him get,  
Yet shed he them : a full rude step he made:  
The *Scots* went out, no longer there they bade  
*Steven of Ireland* that worthy was and wight,  
To help *Wallace* he did full preasse and might,  
With true *Keirly*, doughty in many deed,  
Upon the ground feil *Sutherland* they gart bleed.  
Sixty were slain of *Englishmen* in that place,  
And nine of *Scots* were tint into that case.  
*Butlers* men were so destroyed that tide,  
Into the stour they would no longer byde,  
To get supply he went into the stail,  
Thus lost he there an hundred of great avail.  
As they were best arraying *Butlers* rout,  
Betwixt parties then *Wallace* issued out.  
Sixteen with him they graithed them to go,  
Of all his men he had leaved no mo.  
The *Englishmen* have missed him, in hy  
The hound they took, and followed hastily,  
At the *Gask* wood full fain they would have bee  
But this flouth-hound that cruel was and keen,  
On *Wallace* foot he followed wonder fast,  
While in their sight approached at the last.  
Their horse was wight, and sojourned right lang  
To the next wood they had two miles to gang.  
Of upward ground they yeed with al their might  
Good hope they had, for it was near the night.  
*Fawdown* be tyred, and said, he might not gan  
*Wallace* was wo to leave him in the thrang :

he bade him go, and said, the strength was near,  
that he therefore would not the faster stear :  
*wallace* in yre on the craig can him ta,  
ith his good sword, and strike his head in twa  
readlesse to ground he dushed to the dead,  
om him he lap, and left him in that stead :  
ome deems it to evil, and some to good,  
ut I say here into these termes rude,  
etter it was he did, as thinks me :

irst, to the Hound it may great stopping be  
*Fawdown* was holden of great suspition,  
or he was holden of bruckle complexion.  
ight strong he was, and had but little gone,  
hus *Wallace* wist, had he been left alone :  
nd he were false to enemies he would ga,  
he were true, the *Sutheron* would him fla :  
ight he do nought, but lose him as it was.  
om this question now shortly will I passe.  
eem as ye list, ye that can best, and may s  
ut I rehearse, as mine Author doth say.

the stars as then began for to appear,  
ne *Englishmen* were coming wonder near.  
ve hundred whole were in their Chevalry,  
o the next strength then *Wallace* can him hye :  
even of *Ireland* unwitting of *Wallace*,  
nd good *Keirly* bode still near hand that place,  
the Mure-side into a scroggie glid,  
east *Duplin*, where they this carry made.  
*Fawdown* was left beside them on the land:  
he power came, and suddenly him fand,  
or their sleuth-hound the graith way to him yeed,  
f other dread as then she took no heed.

The sleuth stopped, at Fawdown still she stood,  
 No further would, from time she found the bl  
 The Englishmen deem'd, for other they could no  
 But that the Scots had foughten among them  
 Right wo they were, for losse was their scend  
 Wallace two men among the Host in went,  
 Dissembled well, that no man should them ken  
 Right in esceir, as they were Englishmen.  
*Kairly beheld unto the bold Heroun,*  
 Upon Fawdown as he was looking down:  
 A subtil stroak upward him took that tyde,  
 Under the cloak the grounded sword can glyde  
 By the good malzie, both craig and halse-bane  
 In sunder strake, thus ended this Chiftain.  
 To ground he fell, feil folk about him throng:  
 Treason they cryed, a traitour as among.  
*Kairly with that fled out at the host-side,*  
 His fellow Steven thought it no time to bides  
 The fray was great, and fast away they yeed  
 Both toward Ern: thus scaped they that dread  
 Butler was wo, of weeping might not stint.  
 Thus recklesly this good Knight have they tint.  
 They deemed all that it was Wallace men,  
 Or else himself, though they should not him k  
 He is right near, we shall him have but fail,  
 The feeble wood may little him avail.  
 Fourty there past again to Saint Johnstown,  
 With dead corps to burrying made them bown  
 Parted their men, and diverse wayes yeed:  
 A great power at Duplin still there bade,  
 To Dal each the Butler past but let,  
 At sundry parts the gate was unbeset.

to keep the wood while it was day they thought.  
Wallace thus in the thick Forrest he sought  
for his two men, in mind he had great pain:  
He wist not well if they were tane or slain,  
Escaped whole by any jeopardy:  
Thirteen were left, with him no mo had he.

Gask hall there, their lodging have they tane:  
We they got soon, but meat then had they nae,  
Two sheep they took beside them in a fold,  
Retained their supper into that seemly hold:  
Dished in haste, some meat to them was dight,  
Heard they blow rude horns upon hight:

Two sent he forth to see what it might be:  
They bade right long, but no tydings got he,  
A boisterous noise, so brimly blowing fast:  
Other two into the wood forth past.

One came again, but boisterously can blow,  
To great ire he sent them forth in row.

Then that alone Wallace was leaved there,  
Aewfull blast abounded mickle mair:  
Then trow'd he well they had his lodging seen  
Savord he drew of noble metal keen,  
Then forth he went where that he heard the horn:  
Without the door Fawdoun was him beorn,  
To his sight, his head into his hand.

Crosse he made when that he saw him stand:  
Wallace in the head he swakked there,  
And he in haste soon hint it by the hair,  
Then out against him he could it cast:  
In his heart he was greatly agast.

Right well he crowed it was no sp'rit of man,  
Was a devil that such malice began,

He wist no avail there longer to abide,  
 Up through the hall thus wight Wallace can gy  
 To a close stair, the buirds raf in twinne,  
 Fifteen foot long he lay forth of that Inne :  
 Up the water then suddenly can he fare,  
 Again he blenched what appearance was there :  
 Him thought he saw Fawdow<sup>n</sup> that ugly syre,  
 Upon the house, and all the rest on fire.  
 A great roof-tree he had into his hand,  
 Wallace as then no longer he would stand.  
 Of his good men full great marueil had he,  
 How that they were tint through his fantasie,  
 Trusting right well all this was sooth indeed,  
 Suppose that it be no point of the Creed.  
 Power they had with Lucifer that fell,  
 That time that he parted from heaven to hell,  
 By such mischief if his men might be lost,  
 Drowned or slain amongst the English host ;  
 Or what it was in likenesse of Fawdow<sup>n</sup>,  
 Which brought his men to such confusion :  
 Or if the men ended in evil intent,  
 Some wicked sprite again for him were sent :  
 I can noucht speak of such divinity,  
 To clerks I will let all such matters be.  
 But of Wallace on forth I will you tell,  
 When he was went out of this danger fell :  
 Yet glad he was that he escaped so,  
 But for his men great mournsing can he ma.  
 Flait by himself to the Maker above,  
 Why he suffered his soul such matters prove ?  
 He wist not well if it were God's will,  
 Right or wrong his fortune to fulfill :

And it pleased GOD he trowed it might not be,  
 Should be set in such perplexitie:  
 Great courage in his minde ever drove,  
 Englishmen thinking a mends to have.  
 He was thus walking by him alone,  
 On Erne side, making a piteous moan:  
 John Butler to watch the Fords right,  
 At from his men of Wallace had a sight:  
 The mist was went, and to the mountains gone,  
 To him he raid where that he made his moan;  
 In loud he speired, What art thou walks this gate?  
 True man, Sir, though my voyage be late:  
 Lands I passe from Down unto my Lord,  
 John Stewart, the right who will record,  
 Down is now, new comed from the King.  
 John Butler said, this is a selcouth thing:  
 Thou leid, he said, thou hast been with Wallace.  
 Hal thee know, ere thou come from this place.  
 To him he starr eheCourser wonder wight,  
 drew out his sword, then made him for to fight;  
 Above the knee good Wallace hath him cane,  
 Through thie and brain in sunder strake the bane,  
 Early to ground the Knight fell on the land.  
 Wallace the horse soon sealed in his hand,  
 Anward stroak then took him in that stead,  
 Craig in two, thus was the Butler dead,  
 An Englishman saw their Chiftain was slain,  
 Spear in rest he cast with all his main,  
 Wallace drove from the horse him to bear,  
 Early he wrought as worthy man of wear:  
 The spear he wan withoutten more abaid,  
 A horse he lap, and through a great rout raid,

To Dalreach then he knew the Furd full well,  
 Before him came feil stuffed into steel.  
 He strake the first but bade in the blasoun,  
 While horse and man all fleit the water down.  
 Another soon down from the horse he bare,  
 Stramped to ground, & drown'd withouten mair  
 The third he hit on the harnessse of steel,  
 Throughout the coast the spear it raif ilk deel.  
 The great power after him then can ride,  
 He saw no wisdom there longer to abide :  
 His birnicht brand braithly in hand he bare,  
 Whom he hit right, they followed him no mair,  
 To stuff the chase feil frieks followed fast;  
 But Wallace made the gayest ay agast.  
 The Mure he took, and through their power rode sook  
 The horse was good, but yet he had great dreadis sw  
 For failing him, ere he wan to a strength.  
 The chase was great staled on breadth & lengthis sw  
 Through strong dangers they had him ay in sightis fhi  
 At the Black-furd, there Wallace down can lightis ver  
 The horse stuffed, the way was deep and lang,  
 A large long while wightly on foot can gang.  
 Ere he was horsed, ryders about him cast,  
 He saw full well long time he might not last.  
 Sad men indeed upon him can renew,  
 Without recovery twenty that night he slew,  
 The fiercest ay rudely rebuted he,  
 Kept his horse, and right wisely can flee,  
 While that he came the mirkest Mure amang,  
 His horse gave over and would no further gang.  
 Wallace on foot took him with good intent,  
 The horse he slew ere that he further went,

at Englishmen of him should have no good,  
I left on foot, for well he understood :  
*Sutheron* men on him should have no sight,  
high bather he past with all his might,  
rough the dark mure then from them hath he  
suddenly there came into his thought, (sought,  
great power did walk at Strivling bridge of tree:  
thing he said. No passage is for me.

fault of food, and I have fasted lang,  
war-men now me thinks no time to gang ;  
*Cambuskenneth* I shall the water till,  
God above do with me what he will.  
to this land I may no longer bide.

erry he made some part on Forths side,  
ook off his weed, and graithed him but mair,  
sword he bound that wonder sharply share,  
mong his gear, on his shoulders aloft :  
bus in he went, to great God praying oft,  
f his good grace his cause to take in hand :  
over the water he swam to the south-land,  
rayed him well, the season was right cold,  
r Pisces was into his dayes old.

verhart he cast, to the *Tor-wood* he yeed,  
widow dwelt which helped him in need,  
ther he came ere day began to daw,  
a widow, and privily can caw :  
hey spierd his name, but tel them would he not,  
hile she her self near to his language sought,  
om time she knew that it was wight *Wallace*,  
ejoiced she was, and thanked God of grace.  
he spiered soon, If he was his alone ?  
lourning he said, As men now have I none.

She spiered then, Where that his men should be  
Fair Dame, he said, Go get some meat to me :  
I have fasted since yesterday at morn,  
I dread full sore my men they be forlorn.  
Great part of them I saw to the death brought.  
She got him meat in all the haste she mough.  
A woman he called, and als with her a child,  
And bade them passe again these ways wilde,  
To the *Gaskhall*, tydings for to speir,  
If part was left of his men into fear,  
And she should finde an horse soon in her gate :  
He bade them see if that place stood in stacs.  
Thereof to hear he had full great desire,  
Because he thought it was all into fire.  
They passed out withouten tarry mair,  
Him for to rest, *Wallace* remained there,  
Refreshed he was with meat and drink, and heat,  
Which caused him through natural course to sleep.  
Where he should sleep at the woman he spiered,  
The widow had three sons that were leared:  
First two of them she sent to keep *Wallace*,  
He gart the third go soon to *Dunipace*,  
And tell his Emme that he was hapned there :  
The Parson came to see of his welfare :  
*Wallace* to sleep was laid in the wood-side,  
The two young men without him near could bide,  
The Parson came near hand, the manner saw,  
They beckned to him what stead he should draw.  
The Rone was thick that *Wallace* sleeped in,  
About he went, and made but little din.  
So at the last of him he had a sight,  
Full privately where that his bed was dight :

him beheld, then said unto himself,  
here is a marvell who likes it for to tell :  
this is a Person of worthinesse of hand,  
to weth to stop the power of *England*.  
How false Fortune, the misworker of all,  
by eventure hath given him a fall :  
that he is left without supply of me,  
cruel wife with weapons might him slay.  
*Wallace* him heard, with that the sleep over-past,  
vercely he rose, and said to him als fast :  
hou liest, false Priest, were thou a foe to me,  
would not dread such other ten as thee :  
have had more since yesterday at morn,  
then such sixty assembled me before.  
His Emme him cook, and went forth with *Wallace*,  
he told to him all his most painfull case :  
his night, he said, I was left mine alone,  
in fell debate with enemies many one :  
God at his will, hath ay my life to keep,  
Over *Forth* I swam, that awfull is and deep :  
What I have had in war before this day,  
vilon and pain ( to this night ) is but play :  
so beat I am with strakes sad and sore,  
the shrill water then burnt me mickle more :  
After great blood, throghe heat & cold was wrought  
that of my life almost nothing. Irought.  
moan far more the tynsel of my men,  
Nor of my self, might I suffer such ten.  
The Parson said, Dear son, thou mayst see well,  
longer to strive, it helpeth never a deal :  
thy men are lost, and none will with thee rise,  
for God his sake, make as I shall devine :

Take a Lordship whereon thou mayest live,  
 King Edward will great lands to thee give.  
 Uncle, he said, of such words no mair,  
 This is nothing but eeking of my care :  
 I like better to see the Sutheron die,  
 Then gold or land that they can give to me.  
 Trust thou right well, of war I shall not ceast ;  
 Untill the time I bring Scotland to peace,  
 Or die therefore, the plain to understand.  
 So came Keirly, and good Steven of Ireland :  
 The widows son to Wallace he them brought,  
 Fra they him saw, of no sadness they rought :  
 For perfect joy they weeped with their een,  
 To ground they fell, and thanked heavens King.  
 Als he was glad for rescue of them two,  
 Of their feirs living were left no mo.  
 They told to him that Sir Gerard was dead,  
 How they had well escaped of that stead.  
 Through the Ochel they had gone all that night,  
 To Airth Ferry when that the day was light :  
 How a true Scot through kindnesse of Wallace,  
 Brought them soon over, then kend them to tha  
 Als Keirly wist that Wallace living were, ( place He  
 Near Dunipace that he should find them there. And  
 The Parson gart good purveyance for them dighy The  
 Into Tor-Wood they lodged all that night,  
 While the woman that Wallace north had send,  
 Returned again and told him to an end,  
 What Englissemen in the way she saw dead,  
 Feil was fallen fey in many sundry stead :  
 The horse she saw that Wallace had bereft,  
 At the Gaskhall, standing as it was lefr,

Withouten harm, nor touched of a stone :  
But of his men, good tydings got she none.  
Therefore he grieved greatly in that tide,  
The Forrest he would no longer byde.  
The widow gave him part of silver bright,  
Two of her sons that worthy were and wight :  
The third he left, because he lacked age,  
In wear as then might not win vassalage.  
The Parson then got them good horse and gear,  
But wo he was, his minde was so in wear.  
Thus took he leave without longer abode,  
To Dundaff-mure the samine night he rode.  
Sir John the Graham, which Lord was of that land,  
An aged Knight, had made none other band :  
But purchast peace, in reit he might bide still,  
Tribute he payed full sore against his will,  
Also he had, both wise, worthy, and wight,  
King Alexander at Berwick made him Knight,  
Where showing was of battel to have been,  
Betwixt the Scots, and the bold Persie keen.  
This young Sir John right noble was in wear,  
On a broad sword his father gart him swear,  
He should be true to Wallace in all thing,  
And he to him, while life in them might reign.  
Three nights there Wallace was out of dread,  
Rested him well, so had he meikle need :  
On the fourth day he would no longer bide,  
Sir John the Graham bowned with him to ride :  
And he said, Nay, as then it should not be,  
A plain part yet I will not take on me.  
I have tint men through mine own recklesse deed :  
A burng child als morg sore the fire should dread.

Friends some part I have in *Cliddisdale*,  
 I will go see what they may me avail.  
 Sir John answered, I will your counsel do:  
 When ye think time, send privatly me to,  
 Then I shall come with my power in haste.  
 He him betaught unto the holy Ghaist,  
 Sir John to brogh they should meet whole & sound,  
 Out of *Dundaff* he and his four couth found:  
 In *Bothwel Mure* that night remained he,  
 With one *Crawfurd* that lodged him privilie,  
 Upon the morn to the *Gilbank* he went,  
 Received he was of many with glad intent:  
 For his dear *Ene* young *Auchinlek* dwelt there,  
 Brother he was to the Sheriff of *Aire*.  
 When old Sir Rannald to his death was dight,  
 Then *Auchinlek* wedded that Lady bright;  
 And children got, as stories bear record,  
 Of *Lesmahago*, for he held of that Lord:  
 But he was slain, that pity was the maire,  
 With *Piersies* men into the town of *Aire*.  
 His son dwelt still, then nineteen years of age,  
 And brooked whole his fathers heritage:  
 Tribute he payed for all his lands braid,  
 To the Lord *Piersie*, as his bro her had made,  
 I leave *Wallace* with his dear Uncle still,  
 Of Englishmen yet speak something I will.  
 A messenger soon through the Countrey yeed  
 To Lord *Piersie*, and told this felon deed:  
 Kinclevin was burnt, broken, and casten down,  
 The Captain dead of it, and Saint *Johnstoun*:  
 The Laran als in *Short wood shawes* sheen:  
 Into the Land great sorrow hath been seen,

rogh wight *Wallace* that all this deed hath done  
the town he spye<sup>d</sup>, and that forethought us soon.  
uler is slain with doughty men and dear.

asper speech the *Pierſe* then gan speare,  
hat word of him? I pray thee graithly tell.

Lord, he said, right thus the case befell:  
e know for truth he was left him alone,

nd as he fled he slew full many one:

e horse we found that him that gate could bear,  
t of himself no other word we hear.

*Striveling* bridge we wot he passed nought,  
death in *Forth* he may for us be brought.

*Pierſe* said, Now truly that is sin,  
good of hand he is this world within.

nd he cane peace, and been ouȝt Kings man,  
is whole Empire he might have conquest than.

eat harm it is of our Knights that are dead,  
e must gar see for others in their stead:

ow not yet that *Wallace* lossed be:

Clerks sayes, He shall gar many die.

Messenger sayes, All that forsooth hath been,  
ny hundred that cruel was and keen,

ce he began, are lossed without remead.

*Pierſe* said, Forsooth he is not dead:

Crooks of *Forth* he knows wonder well:  
ison live that shall our Nation feil.

en he is stressed, then can he swim at will:

eat strength he hath, both wit & grace theretill.

essenger the Lord charged to wend,

nd his command in write he with him send:

John Stewart great Sheriff then he made  
Saint Johnstoun, and all the Lands brade:

Into Kinlewin there dwelt none there again.  
 There was nought else but broken walls in plain,  
 Leave I them thus ruling the Lands there,  
 And speak I will of Wallace good welfare :  
 He sent Keirly unto Rannald that night,  
 To Boyd and Blair, that worthy were and wight;  
 And Adam als, his Cousen good Wallace.  
 To them declared he of this painfull case,  
 Of his escape out of that company :  
 Right wonder glad was that good Chevaltie.  
 Fra time he knew that Wallace living was,  
 Good diligence they made to him to passe:  
 Master John Blair was one of that message,  
 A worthy Clerk, both wise, and als right sage;  
 Learned he was before in Paris town,  
 Amongst Masters in science of good renown.  
 Wallace and he at home in school had been,  
 Soon afterwards, as verity was seen,  
 He was the man that chiefly undertook,  
 That first compyled to dyte the Latine Book  
 Of Wallace life, right famous of renown.  
 And Thomas Gray Parson of Libbertoun,  
 With him they were, and put in historial,  
 Oft one or both mickle of his travel.  
 And therefore hereof them I make mention.  
 Master John Blair to Wallace made him bowing,  
 To see his health his comfort was the moe,  
 As they full oft together were before.  
 Silver and gold they gave him for to spend,  
 So did he them freely when God it send.  
 Of good welfare as then he wanted none,  
 Englisemen wist he was left him alone :

Where he should be, was none of them couth say,  
trowned or slain, or else escaped away,  
herefore of him they took but little head.  
They knew him not, the lesse he was in dread.  
All true Scots great favour to him gave,  
What good they had he needed not to crave.  
The peace lasted that Sir Rannald had tane,  
Whole three moneths it should not be out-gane.  
Whole Christmas then Wallace remained there.  
In Lanerk oft to sport he made reape.  
When that he went to Kilbank from the towne,  
The found men was of that Nation,  
To Scotland they did never givence more :  
Some sticked they, some throats insunder shore,  
All were found dead, but none wist who it was.  
Whom he handled, he let no further pass.  
There Hesilrig dwelt, that cursed Knight to wailes,  
Sheriff he was of all these Lands haile :  
Offellon outrage despiteful in his deed,  
Many of him therefore had meikle dread,  
Marvel he thought who durst his people slay.  
Without the town he caus'd great number ga.  
When Wallace saw that they were mo then he,  
Then did he nought but salust courteouslie.  
Als his four men buren them so quietly,  
No Sutheron could deem them un honestly.  
In Lanerk, a gentle woman there,  
Maiden mylde, as my Book will declare,  
Eighteen years old, and little more of age,  
Als born she was to part of heritage.  
Her father was of worship and renown,  
And Hew Braidsute he heught of Lamingtown,

As fel were then into the Countrey call'd,  
 Before-time they Gentlemen were of ald :  
 But this good man and ak his wife was dead,  
 The Maiden wist then of none other remed,  
 But still she dwelt in tribute in the town,  
 And purchast had King *Edwards* protection.  
 Servants with her, of friends at her will,  
 Thus lived she without desire of ill.  
 A quiet house, as she might hold in wear.  
 For *Hesilrig* had done her mickle dear :  
 Slain her brother which eldest was and Heir :  
 All suffered she, and right lowly her bare.  
 Amiable, so benign, ware, and wise,  
 Courteous and sweet, fulfilled of all gentrice :  
 Well ruled of tongue, right hail of countenance :  
 Of vertue she was worthy to advance :  
 Humbly her held, and purchast a good name :  
 Of every wight she keeped her from blame.  
 True religious folk a great favour her lent.  
 Upon a day to the Kirk as she went,  
 Wallace her saw as he his eyes can cast,  
 The print of love him prunzied at the last,  
 So asperly through beauty of that bright,  
 With great uneale in presence bide he might :  
 He knew full well the kindred of her blood,  
 And how she was in honest use and good.  
 Whiles would he think to love her over the lave,  
 And other while he thought on his dissise,  
 How that his men were brought to confusion,  
 Through his last love he had in *Saint Johnston*.  
 Then would he think to live and let overslide,  
 But that thought long in minde could not abide.

He told Keirly of his new lust and bair,  
hen asked he him of his true counsele.  
After, he said, as far as I can feel,  
f likelinesse it may be wonder well :  
nce so ye love, take her in marriage  
oodly she is, and als of heritage :  
ppose that ye in loving feel amisse,  
reat GOD forbid it should he so with this.  
o marry thus, I cannot yet attend,  
would of war first see a final end :  
will no more alone to my love gang,  
ke heed to me, for dread I suffer wrang.  
o proffer love thus soon I would not prieve,  
ight I leave off, in war I think to live.  
hat is this love ? nothing but foolishnesse :  
may reave me both wit and steadfastnes,  
hen said he thus, This will not graithly be,  
mours and wars at once to reign in me.  
ght soothit is, stood I in blesse of love,  
here deeds were, I should the better prove.  
t well I wot, where great earnest is in thought,  
leteth war that in wile men is wrought.  
blesse it be, but only till on deed :  
hen he that thinkes of love for to speed,  
may do well, hath he fortune and grace ;  
t this stands all into another case.  
great Kingdom with feil foes overlet,  
ght hard it is any mends for to get  
against them and keep the observance  
hich belongs to love, and all hei frivole chance.  
ample I have which me foithinked fair,  
ope in GOD, it shall be so no mair.

The truth I know of this, and her linage:  
 I know nought her, therefore I losse a gage.  
 To Keirly he thus argued in this kinde,  
 But great desire remained in his minde:  
 For to behold that freely of fassoun,  
 A while he lef, and came not in the town,  
 On other thing did make his wit to vaik,  
 Proving that he might of that labour flak.  
 When Keirly s<sup>w</sup> he suffered pain for thy,  
 Dear Sir, he said, ye live in sluggary:  
 Go see your love and ye shall get comfort.  
 At his counsel he walked for to sport,  
 Into the Kirk, where she made residence.  
 She knew him well; but as for Eloquence,  
 She durst not well in presence to him kyth,  
 Ful sore she dread that Sutherland should her mythe  
 For Hesilrig had a matter new begun,  
 And her desired in marriage to his son.  
 With her maiden this Wallace she besought  
 To dyn with her, and privatly she him brought  
 Through a garden she had gart work anew,  
 So Englishmen nought of their meeting knew.  
 He kissed this Maid with gladnesse and pleasance,  
 Soon her besought right heartly acquaintance.  
 She answered him with humble words and wise,  
 Were mine acquaintance worthy for to prise,  
 Ye shall it have, as God me save in saul,  
 But Englishmen do gar our power fall,  
 Through violence of them, and their bairnage,  
 That hath well near destroyed our Linage.  
 When Wallace heard her complaint piteously,  
 Grieved in heart he was right greatly,

With yre and love him set into a rage,  
At nought for they he sobered in courage.  
Of this matter he told as I said aire,  
To that good love how love constrained him fair.  
He answered him reasonably again,  
And said, I shal to your service be bane,  
With all pleasance in honest causes bail,  
And I trust nought ye would set to assaile.  
For your Worship, to do me dishonour,  
And I a Maid, and stand in many stour,  
From Englishmen to save my woman-heid,  
And coalt have made to keep me from their feid.  
With my good will I will no Lemman be,  
No man born: therefore I think should ye  
Desire me not but into goodlinessse:  
By chance ye think I were too low percase,  
To pretend to be your righteous wife,  
To your service I would use all my life.  
Here I beseech, for your worship in arms,  
Charge me not with no ungodly harms:  
Let me defend for worship of your blood.  
When Wallace well her true tale understood,  
In a part him thought it was reason,  
Her desire: therefore to conclusion,  
Thanked her and said, if it might be,  
Through Gods will, that our Kingdom be free,  
Would you wed with all hearty pleasance,  
At this time I may not take such chance.  
And for this cause no other now I crave:  
A man of war may not all pleasance have.  
Other talk, can I tell you no mair,  
My purpose, what band that they made ther?

Conclude

Conclude they this, and to the dinner went,  
The sore grievance remained in his intent.  
Loss of his men, and lusty pain of love :  
His leave he took, at that time to remove.

**C H A P. II.** How Wallace past to Lochmabane  
and how they cutted his horse tailes, and how he  
shave the Blood letter.

Then to Gilbank he past ere it was night,  
Upon the morn with his four men him dight,  
To the Cor-head without resting him rade,  
Where his nevoy Thom Haliday him abade,  
And Edward Little als, his Cousen dear,  
Which was so blyth when he wist him so near,  
Thanking great God he sent him safe again,  
For many dreamed he in Strathern was slain.  
Good chear they made all out those days thre,  
Then Wallace said that he desired to see  
Lochmabane town, & Englishmen that were ther,  
On the fourth day they bowned them to fare :  
Sixteen he was of goodly Chevalry,  
In the Knockwood he leaved all but three :  
Thomas Haliday went with them to the town,  
Edward Little, and Keirly made them bown,  
To an Hostler Thomas Haliday led them right,  
And gave command their dinner should be dight  
To hear a Masse, in good intent they yeed,  
Of Englishmen they thought there was no dread.  
One Clifford came, was Emes son to the Lord,  
And three with him, the truth for to record,  
To their Innes soon, after Wallace was past :  
Who ought these horse? in great hathing he askt,  
The good-wife said, for to have pleased him bet,  
Three Gentlemen are come out of the west.

Who devil them made so gayly for to ride?  
In faith with me a wed there must abide.

These lewd *Scots* have learned little good,  
Lo all these horse are shent for fault of blood.

Into great scorn, wit outhen words more,  
The tailes all of these three horse they shore.

The good-wife cryed, and piteously can greet:  
So *Wallace* came, and could the Captain meet,  
A woman told him, they had his horse shent.  
For proper yre he grew in maltalent:

He followed fast, and said, Good freinds, abide,  
Service to take for thy craft in this tide:

Marchel thou art without command of me,  
Reward again me thinks, I should pay thee;

Since I of late new came out of the west,  
In this Country a Barbour of the best:

To cut and shave, and that one wonder good:  
Now shalt thou feel how I use to let blood.

With his good sword the Captain hath he tane,  
While horse again he marshelled never ane.

Another soon upon the head strake he,  
While chafts and cheeks upon the gte can flee;

By that his men the other three had slain:  
Their horse they took, and graithed them ful bane,

Out of the town for dinner had they none.

The wife she prayed that made so piteous moan,  
Then *Englishmen* fra their Chiftain was dead,

So *Wallace* sought from many fundry steed:  
From the Castle came cruel men and keen.

When *Wallace* hath their sudden sembly seen,  
oward some strengch he bowned him to ride.  
Or then him thought it was not time to bide.

His horse bled fast, that gart him dreading have,  
 Of his good men he would have had the lave.  
 To the Knock wood withouten more they rade,  
 But into it no sojourning he made :  
 That wood as then was neither thick nor strang,  
 His men he got, then lighted he to gang.  
 Toward an hight, and led their horse a while,  
 The Englishmen were then within a myle,  
 On fresh horse riding full hastily,  
 Seven score as then were in that company.  
 The Scots lap on, when they that power saw,  
 Toward the South them thought it best to draw,  
 Then Wallace laid, It was no wit in wear,  
 With our power to bide them bargan here.  
 You are men good, therefore I would that we  
 Innermore seek, while GOD send us supplie.  
 Haliday said, We shal do your counsel :  
 But sore I dread these hurt horse will fail.  
 The Englishmen in birnicht armour clear,  
 By them to them approached wonder near :  
 Horsed Archers shot, and would not spare,  
 Of Wallace men they wounded two full fair.  
 In yre he grew when that he saw them bleed,  
 Himself he turned, and on them soon he yeed :  
 Sixteen with him that worthy were in weare,  
 Of the foremost right sharply down they bear,  
 At that return fifteen in field was slain,  
 The lave they fled into their power again.  
 Wallace followed with his good Chevalrie,  
 Thomas Haliday in weare was full busie :  
 A bushment saw that cruel was and keen,  
 Two hundred hail of well graiched Englishmen.

Uncle, he said, our power is too sma,  
From this plain field I counsell you to d<sup>r</sup>a :  
Too few we are against yon fellon stail.  
Wallace returned ful soon at his counsel,  
At the Cor-head full fain they would have been:  
But Englishmen have well their purpose seen,  
In plain battel them followed hardily.  
In danger thus they held them awfully.

Hew of More-land on Wallace followed fast.

He had before made many Scots agast.

Holden he was of weir the worthiest man,

In North England was with him living than:

In his Armour wel forged of fine steel,

A noble Courser bare him both fast and wel:

Wallace returned beside a buirly Oak,

And on him set a fellon sikker stroak,

Both collar bone and shoulder blaid in two,

Through the mid coast, the good sword gart he go:

His spear he wan, and als his Courser bright,

Then left his own, for losed was his might,

For lack of blood he might no farther gang.

Wallace on horse the Sutheron men among,

His men relieved that doughty were indeed.

him to rescue out of that fellon dread,

Tuel stroaks forsooth there might be seen,

On either side till blood ran on the green,

Right perillously the tembly was to see,

Hardly and hot continued the maillie.

Evening rescue of Scots and English also

Some carved bone in sunder, and some the bals,

Some hurt, some hant, some dung into the dead;

The hardy Scots so stirred in that field,

With *Hakday* on foot that boldly abade,  
Among the *Sutheron* a full great room they mad  
*Wallace* on horse hint him a noble spear,  
Out through them rade, as good Chiftain in we  
Three flew he there ere that his spear was gane,  
Thus his good sword in hand then hath he cane  
Dang on derly with straiks sad and sore,  
Whom that he hit, grieved the *Scots* no more.  
*Fra Sutheron* men by natural treason knew,  
How with a stroke a man ay he slew,  
Then marvelled they he was so meikle of main,  
For their best men in that kinde had he slain.  
That his great strength again helped him noughe,  
Nor none other in contrare *Wallace* sought.  
Then said they all, Leave he in strength uncane,  
This whole Kingdom he will win him alone.  
They left the field, and to their power fled,  
And told their Lord, how evil the foremost sp  
Which *Graystock* heght, was new come in the la  
Therefore he crowed none durst against him stan  
Wonder he thought when as he saw that fight,  
Why his good men for so few took the flight.  
At that return twenty in field were tint,  
And *Moreland* als therefore he would not fint  
But followed fast with three hundred but dre  
And swore he would be venged on that deed.  
The *Scots* wan horse, because their own did fa  
In fleeing then choosed the most avail.  
Out of the field this wight *Wallace* is gone,  
Of his good men he had not losset one:  
Five wounded were, but lightly forth they to  
*Wallace* a space behinde them ay abode.

nd Haliday proved well in many place,  
sister son he was to good Wallace.  
Yarlike they rode, and held their horse on end,  
or they trowed well the Sutheron would offend:  
With whole power at once upon them set:  
But Wallace cast their purpose for to let:  
To break their ray, he visit them full fast:  
The Englishmen so greatly were agast,  
But none of them durst rush out of this stail,  
In a ray together held them hail.  
The Sutheron saw how that abundantly,  
Wallace abode near hand their Chevalry:  
Morelands horse they knew him wonder well,  
Set to their Lord, and told him everilk deal:  
Sir, they said, forsooth this same is he,  
That with his hands caused so many die.  
With his horse grace upon his feet to bide,  
Doubts not through five thousand for to ride,  
Reed you cease and follow him no more,  
Dread that we repent it syn fall sore.  
Blamed them, and said, Men may well see,  
Wards ye are, that for so few would flee.  
Their counsel yet leave would be them nought;  
Great ire he sadly on them sought,  
Ling a place where he might bargan make:  
Place was wo upon him for to take,  
He so few to bide them on a plain:  
Queensbery he would have been full fain:  
In himself he took so great travail,  
End his men, if that might him avail,  
Lord in hands right manly him to wear,  
Waiting fast if he might get a spear.

Now here, now there, before them to and fro,  
His horse gave over, and might no further go;  
Right at the skirt of Quinsberry befell,  
Bet upon grace, as mine Author will tell:  
Sir John the Graham that worthy was and wight  
To the Cor-head came on the other night,  
Thirty with him of noble men at wage,  
The first daughter he had in marriage,  
Of Haliday, was Nevoy to Wallace,  
Tydings to spier, Sir John passed off that place  
With men to speak, where they a tryst had set,  
Right near the stead where Scott and English  
And Kirkpatrick that cruel was and keen,  
In Eskdale-wood that half a year had been:  
With Englishmen he could not well accord,  
Of Torthorwald he Baron was and Lord:  
Of kin he was to Wallace mother dear,  
On Crawford side, that meikle had to stier:  
Twenty he had of worthy men and wight,  
By then Wallace approached to their sight.  
Sir John the Graham when he the counterfa  
On them he rade, and stood but little aw.  
His good-father he knew right wonder well,  
Cast down his spear, and sunzied not a deal.  
Kirkpatrick als with worthy men of wear,  
Fifty in front at once they down can bear,  
Through the thickest of three hundred he  
On Sutheron side full great slaughter they  
Them to rescue that was in felon throng,  
Wallace on foot the great power among:  
Good room he got through help of Gods gr  
The Sutheron fled, and left them in that pl

Horses they wan, to stuff the chase good speed,  
 Wallace and his that doughty were indeed.  
 Graystock took a ght on stern horse and stout,  
 An hundred held together in a rout :  
 Wallace on them full sadly can pursue,  
 The fleeing well of Englishmen he knew,  
 That ay the best would passe with their Chiftain,  
 Before him fand he good Sir John the Graham,  
 Ay stricking down whom ever he might hy.  
 Then Wallace said, This is but waste folly,  
 Commons to slay where Chiftains goes away :  
 Your horse are fresh, therefore do as I say :  
 Good men ye have are yet in noble state,  
 To yon great rout, for Gods love hold your gate:  
 Sunder them soon, we shall come at your hand.  
 When Sir John had this tale well understand,  
 Of none other, from thenceforth took he heed,  
 So the foremost he followed well with speed.  
 Kirkpatrick als considered this counsel,  
 They charged their men ay follow on the stail :  
 At his command full soon with them they met :  
 Sad straiks and sore sadly upon them set.  
 His Uncle als he knew right wonder well,  
 Cast down his spear, and sounzied not a deal.  
 Kirkpatrick als with worthy men of wear,  
 Thirty on front at once down they bear.  
 Through the thickest Sir John the Graham rade,  
 On Sutheron side full great slaughter they made.  
 Good room he got, through help of Gods grace,  
 The Sutheron fled, and left them in that place.  
 Horses they wan to stuff the chase good speed,  
 Wallace and his that doughty were indeed.

Graystock fled fast on stern horse and stout,  
An hundred held together in a rout.  
Wallace on them sadly could persue,  
The fleeing well of *Englishmen* he knew.  
*Wallace* on horse he hint a noble spear,  
And followed fast as good Chifcain in wear.  
Three slew he there ere that his spear was gone,  
Then his good sword in his hand hath he tane,  
Dang on derfy with straiks sad and sore :  
Whom that he hit grieved the *Scots* no more.  
Upon the lave fighting full wonder fast,  
And many groom they made full sore agast.  
The *Englishmen* that busie were in wear,  
Assailed sore them from the Mosse to bear.  
Right perillous the sembly was to see :  
Hardy and heat continued the mellie.  
Shewing the rescue of *Scots* and *English* als,  
Some carved bones in sunder, some the hals.  
Sir John the Graham to Graystock fast he sought,  
His pensane then it helped him right nought:  
Upon the craig a graith straike gave him right,  
The burely brand was braid, and birnish brights  
In sunder carved the mailzies of fine steel,  
Through brain and bone it rushed ever ilk deal.  
Dead with that dint to the groûd down him dra  
By that Wallace assembled on the lave.  
Derfy to death fel frieks there he dight,  
Rose never again, whom ever he hit right.  
Kilpatrick came, Thom Halsday, and their mo  
Their doughty deeds were noble for to ken.  
At the Knock-head the bold Graystock was slain  
And many mo which were of meikle main ;

to save their lives, part in the wood they past,  
the Scottishmen they ran together fast.

When Wallace with Sir John the Graham had met,  
right goodly he with humblenesse him greet;  
ardon he asked of the reprove before,  
to the chase, and said he should no more  
information make to him that was so good.  
Then that Sir John well Wallace understood,  
so away, he said, thereof as now no mair:  
e did full right, it was for our welfare:  
Wiser in war ye are all out then I:  
other in Arms ye are to me for thy.

Kirkpatrick then that was his Cousing dear,  
he thanked him right on a good manner.  
ight score wer slain ere they wold leave the stead  
the fleeing folk they knew of no remead.  
ot one was lost of all their Chevalry,  
Sir John the Graham to them came happily.  
ne day was done, approaching was the night,  
Wallace then they asked counsel right.  
e answered thus, I speak but with your leave,  
ight loath I were any good men to grieve:  
t this I say, in terms short, for me,  
would assail, if ye think it may be,  
uchmabane house which now is left alone,  
or well I wot that power in it is none.

Carlaverock als yet Maxwell hath in his hand,  
and we had these, they might be both a wand  
against Sutheron that now hath our Countrie;  
y what ye will, this is the best thinks me.

Sir John the Graham gave first his good consent,  
en all the lave right with a whole intent,

To Lochmabane right hastily they ride:  
 When they came there, not half a mile beside,  
 The night was dark, to counsel are they gone :  
 Of Moon or Star appearance was there none.  
 Then Wallace said, We think this land at rest :  
 Thom Haliday, thou knowst the Countrey best,  
 I hear no noise of feil folks here about,  
 Therefore I trow we are the lesse in doubt.  
 Haliday said, I will take one with me,  
 And ride before, the Countrey for to see.  
 Watson he called, with me make thee bown,  
 With them thou wast ay neighbour in this town.  
 I grant I was with them against my will,  
 And mine intent was ay to do them ill.  
 Unto the gate pearly they two forth rade,  
 The Porter came withouten longer abide :  
 At John Watson then tydings could he spier.  
 Open, he bade, the Captain cometh near.  
 The gate but more unwisely up he drew,  
 Thom Haliday soon by the craig him threw,  
 And with a knife he sticked him in that stead,  
 In a dark hole down dre adlesse cast him dead.  
 John Watson hatb hint the keyes in his hand,  
 The power then with Wallace was comand :  
 They entred in, before them found no mo,  
 Except women, and simple servants two :  
 In the Kitching long scudlers had they been!  
 Soon they were slain. When the Lady had seen  
 She cry'd for grace, for him that died on tree.  
 Then Wallace said, Madame, your noise let be  
 To women yet we do but little ill,  
 And young children, we like not for to spill.

would have meat, *Haliday*, what sayes thou ?  
 or fasting folk to dine good time were now.  
 Great purveyance was ordained them before,  
 both bread and Ail, good wine, and other store.  
 So meat they bowned, for they had fasted lang.  
 Good men of arms into the cloisse cauld gang :  
 But fleeing folk on foot they from them glaid,  
 In the *Knock-head*, where great mellie was made ;  
 Y as they came, *John Watson* let them in,  
 And done to death withouten noise or din.  
 No man left there that was of *England* born.  
 The Castle well they viewed on the morn :  
 Or *Johnstone* sent a man of good degree,  
 Second daughter forsooth wedded had he,  
 Of *Haliday's* dear Nevoy to *Wallace*,  
 Great Captain then they made him of that place,  
 They left him there into a good array,  
 They ished forth upon the other day.  
 Women had leave in *England* for to fare.  
 Good *Wallace* & Sir *John the Graham* could care  
 Not the *Corthead*, and lodged there that nighg :  
 Upon the morn the Sun was at the hight :  
 After dinner they would no longer bide,  
 Their purpose took in *Crawford-Mure* to ride.  
 Sir *John the Graham*, with *Wallace* that was wight,  
 From *Haliday* again returned right  
 To the *Corball*, and there remained but dread.  
 To *Sutherland* wist principal who did this deed.  
 Kirkpatrick past to *Eskdale* woods wide,  
 In safety there he thought he shold abide.  
 Good *Wallace* and Sir *John the Graham* in fear,  
 With them fourty men of arms clear :

Through Crawford Mure as they then took the  
On Englishmen their minde remained ay. (w  
w)

CHAP. III. How Wallace wan the Castle  
Crawford, and slew the Captain thereof.

From Crawford John the water down they ride  
Near hand the night, they lodged upon Clydesdale  
Their purpose took into a quiet vail,  
Then Wallace said, I would we might assaile  
Crawford Castle with some good jeopardie :  
Sir John the Graham, how say ye best may be ?  
This good Knight said, If the men were without  
To take the house theré is but little doubt.  
A Squyer then ruled that Lorship haile,  
Of Cumberland born, his name was Mortindale  
Then Wallace said, My self will passe in feir,  
And one with me, of harbery for to speir :  
Follow on drigh, if that we mister ought.  
Edward Little with his Master forth sought,  
To an Hostillary, and with a woman met,  
She told to them, that Sutheron there were set  
If ye be Scots, I counsel you passe by,  
For if they may, ye will get evil harbery.  
At drink they are, so have they been right long  
Great word there is of Wallace them among.  
They crow that he hath found his men again :  
At Lochmabane feil Englishmen are slain.  
The house is lost that makes them be full wo :  
I hope in God that they shall soon tyn mo.  
Wallace spiered, of Scotland if that she be ?  
She said, Yea : and thinks yet to see  
Sorrow on them, through help of God's grace.  
He asked her, Who was into that place ?

No man of fence was left that house within :  
Twenty are here making great noise and din.

Wallace, she said, if that I might once see  
The worthy Scots in it mought matter be.

With this woman he would no longer stand.  
Beaken he made, Sir John came at his hand.

Wallace went in, and said, Benedicicie.

The Captain spaired, what bellamy may thou be,  
What comes so grim? some tydings to us tell.

You art a Scot, the devil thy Nation quel.

Wallace braid out a sword withoutten more,  
Unto the breast the brime Captain he bore,

Throughout the coast, sticked him to the dead;  
Another he hit award upon the head.

Whom ever he strake, he bursted bone and lyre,  
Til of them dead fell flatling in the fire."

Wasty payment he made them on the door,  
And Edward Little keeped well the door.

Sir John the Graham full fain would have been to,  
Edward him bade at the Castle begin,

For of these folks we have but little dread.

Sir John the Graham fast to the Castle yeed.

Wallace rudenly such routs on them gave,

That twenty men derly to death he drove.

Fifteen he strake, and fifteen hath he slain,

Edward slew five which was of meikle main.

To the Castle Wallace had great desire,

By that Sir John had set the house on fire :

None was therein that great defence could mie,

But women sore fast weeping into wae.

Without the place a bold Bulwark was made,

Wallace went over withoutten longer bade :

The woman soon he saved from the dead.  
 Weak folks he put, and children from that stea  
 Of purveyance he found little or none,  
 Before that time their victual was all gone :  
 Yet in that place they lodged all that night,  
 From th' Hostlary brought such good as the Va  
 Upon the morn houses they spoilt fast, ( might so  
 All things that dought, out of that place they cal  
 Tree-work they burnt, that was within the wane his  
 And wals brake down that stalwart were of stane By  
 Spoild what they might, then would no longer bid in A  
 Unto Dundaff the same night they did ride, At i  
 And lodged there with all mirth and pleasance,  
 Thanking great God that sent the so good chanc

*The end of the Fifth Book.*



## THE SIXTH BOOK.

### CHAP. I.

*Of the Spousage of Wallace, and how Hesilrig  
 Wallace wife in the Town of Lanerk, and how  
 Wallace slew Hesilrig for the same cause, &  
 put the Englishmen out of Lanerk.*

**T**hen passed were the Octaves of Febr  
 And part of March by right digestion:  
 Appeared then the last moneth of Mar,  
 The sign of Summer, with his sweet season.  
 By that Wallace from Dundaff made him bown  
 His leave he took, and to Kilbank can fare:  
 The rumour rose through Scotland up and down  
 With Englisemen, that Wallace living were.

Into April, when clothed is but ween,  
The able ground through working of Nature,  
And woods have on their worthy weeds green :  
When *Nymphis* in building of her boure,  
With oyle and balm fulfilled of sweet odour :  
Janeittis in trace, as they were wont to gang,  
Walking their course in every casual hour,  
So glad the Hunters with their merry sang.

In this same time to him approached new,  
His lusty pain of which I spake of aye :  
By loves case he thought for to pursue  
In Lanerk, town and hither can he fare :  
At residence a while remained there,  
In her presence, as I have said before :  
Though Englishmen grieved at his repaire,  
Yet he delighted the thing that set him sore.

The fire of Love him ruled at such wise,  
He liked well with that goodly to be :  
Whiles he would think of dangers for to rise,  
And other whiles out of her presence flee :  
To cease of war it were the best for me,  
Thus wio I nought but sadness on ilk side,  
Shal never man this cowardnesse in me see :  
To war I will, for chance that may betide.

What is this, Love ? It is but great mischance,  
That me would bring from arms verily :  
I will not change my worship for pleasance,  
In war I think my time to occupy.  
Yet her to love I will not let for thy :  
More I shall desire my worship to reserve,  
From this day forth, then evermore did I :  
I fear of war, whether I live or sterue.

What shall I say, Wallace was plainly set,  
 To love her best in all the world so wide :  
 Thinking he should of his desire to get,  
 And so befell by concord, on a tide,  
 That she was made at his command to bide :  
 And this began the stinting of this strife.  
 The band began with graith witnesse besides  
 Mine Authour says, she was his wedded wife.

Now live in peace, now live in good concord:  
 Now live in play, now live in whole pleasance,  
 For she by chance hath both her love and Lord:  
 He thanks love that did him so advance,  
 So evenly held by favour the ballance :  
 Then he at will may lay her in his arms :  
 She thanked God of her high happy chance,  
 For in his time he was the flower of arms.

Fortune him shew her double figured face,  
 Feil syse, or then he had been set above,  
 In felon now, delivered now through graces,  
 Now at unease, now at unrest, and ruse,  
 Now well at will, willing his pleasant love,  
 And thought himself out of adversitie.  
 Desiring ay his Manhood for to prove,  
 In Courage set upon the stages hic.

The very truth I cannot graithly tell,  
 Into this life how long that they had been :  
 Through natural course of generation fell,  
 A child was cheved these two lovers between,  
 Which goodly was a Maiden bright and sheen :  
 So farther forth became time to her age,  
 A Squyer shaw that then full well hath seen,  
 This life lait mangot her in mariage,

The other Maid wedded a Squyer wight,  
 which was well knowna come in of Balliol's blood,  
 and their heirs by lyne succeeded right  
 to Lammingtoun, and other Lands good.:  
 f this matter the right who understood,  
 ereof as now I will no more proceed.  
 f my sentence shortly to conclude,  
 f other thing my purpose is to reed.

Right goodly men came of this Lady yng:

either of them as now I speak no mair,

but Wallace forth into his war can reign :

he might not cease great courage so him bear,

otheron to slay, for dread he would not spare,

and they oft syse feil causes to him wrought,

om that time forth which moved him so fair,

but never in world out of his mind was brought.

Now leav thy mirth, now leave thy whole pleasaunce

now leave thy blesse, now leave thy childish age :

now leave thy youth, now follow thy hard chance

now leave thy lust, now leave thy marriage :

now leave thy Love, or thou shalt tyne a gage,

which never in earth shall be redeemed again.

Fy on Fortune, and all her fierce outrage,

live in war, go live in cruel pain.

Fy on Fortune, fy on thy frivole wheel :

on thy trust, for here it hath no leſt,

at so transfigured Wallace out of his weel :

when he trusted for to have lived best,

pleasance here to him is but a jest,

rough thy fers cours that hath none hap to hoe,

thou overthrew out of his liking rest,

great pleasance, in war, travel and wo.

What is Fortune, who draws the date so fast?  
 We wit there is both well and wicked chance;  
 But this false world with many double cast,  
 In it is nought but very variance.  
 It is nothing to heavenly governance.  
 Then pray we all to the Maker above,  
 Which hath in hand of Justice the Ballance,  
 That he us grant it of his dear lasting love.  
*Hereof as now further I speak no mair,  
 But to my purpose shortly will I fare.*

**T**Welve hundred years, thereto ninty & seven  
 From Christ was born the righteous King  
 Heaven,

*William Wallace into good liking goes,  
 In Lanerk town among his mortal foes.  
 The Englishmen that ever stout have been,  
 With Hesilrig that cruel was and keen :  
 And Robert Thorп a fellow subtil Knight,  
 Hath found the way by what means best he might  
 How that they should make contrarie to Wallace  
 By argument, as he came upon case.  
 On from the Kirk that was without the Town,  
 While their power might be in Arms bown :  
 Sir John the Graham that worthy was and true,  
 To Lanerk town good Wallace could persue:  
 Of his welfare as he full oft hath seen,  
 Of men he had in company fifteen :  
 And Wallace nine, they had no fears mo;  
 Upon the morn unto the Masse they go,  
 They and their men gatched in goodly green,  
 For the season such use ful long hath been.*

hen sadly they had said their devotion,  
he argued them as they went through the Town,  
the strongest man that *Heslrig* then knew,  
and als he had of lightly words anew,  
he salust them as it were but in scorn,  
neu gaide, good day bone Senzour, & good morn.  
Who scorns thou? quoth *Wallace*, who leared thee?  
Why, Sir, quoth he, came ye not over the sea?  
ardon me then, for I wend you had been  
an Ambassade to bring an uncouth Queen.  
*Wallace* answered: Such pardon as we have  
thus to give, thy part thou shalt not crave:  
since ye are *Scots*, yet saluted shall ye be:  
Good even daucht Lord Ballauch Benochadie.  
More *Sutheron* men to them assembled near.  
*Wallace* was loath as then to make a stear.  
One made a hit, and scrip at his long sword.  
Hold still thine hand, quoth he, & speak the word,  
With thy long sword thou makest meikle boast.  
Thereof, quoth he, thy Dame made little coast.  
What cause hast thou to wear that goodly green?  
My most cause is, but for to make thee teen.  
What should a *Scot* do with so fair a knife?  
He said: The Priest that jangled thy wife,  
That woman long hath called him so fair,  
While that his child worshed to be thine heir.  
Me think, quoth he, thou drivest me to scorn:  
Thy Dame was jaiped ere ever thou was born.  
The power then assembled on him about,  
Two hundred men that stalwart were and stout.  
The *Scottissh* saw their power was command,  
Sir Robert Thorn and *Heslrig* at hand.

Great multitude with weapons birnished been,  
The worthy *Scots* that cruel were and keen,  
Amongst the *Sutheron* such dints gave that tide,  
While blood on breid bulisted from wounds wide  
*Wallace* in stour was cruelly fightand,  
Of a *Sutheron* he smote off the right hand :  
And when the carle of fighting might no mair,  
With his left hand in yre held a buckler,  
Then from the stump the blood sprang out ful fai,  
In *Wallace* face abundantly can it cast :  
Into great part it marred him of his sight :  
Sir *John* the *Graham* a stroke hath tane him righ,  
With his good sword upon the *Sutheron* syte,  
Derly to death drove him into that yre.  
The peril was right awful, hard and strong,  
The stour endured marvellous and long :  
The *Englishmen* yet gathered wonder fast,  
The worthy *Scots* the gate left at the last,  
When they had slain and wounded many one,  
To *Wallace* Innes the gainest way ate gone.  
Then passed soon, defended them right well,  
He and Sir *John* with swords of tempered steel.  
Behind their men, while they the gate had tane,  
The woman then which was full wifl of wane,  
The peril saw with felon noise and din,  
Set up the gate, and let them enter in,  
Through to a strength they passed off that stead,  
Fiftay *Sutheron* upon the gate lay dead.  
This fair woman with businesse and might,  
The *Englishmen* did tarry with a slight :  
While that *Wallace* into the wood was past,  
Then Cartlane craigs they pursued full fast.

When Sutheron saw that cheaped was Wallace,  
gain they turned, the woman took on case,  
but her to death, I cannot tell you how :  
of such matters I may not tarry now.

Where great dole is but redeeming again,  
newing of it, is but eeking of pain.

true woman had served her full lang,  
out of the Town the gainest way can gang,  
so Wallace told how all the deed was done :  
the painfull wo sought to his heart full soon :

Vere not for shame he had shot to the ground,  
or bitter bail that in his breast was bound.

Sir John the Graham both wise, gentle and free,  
Great mourning made, that pity was to see :  
and als the lave that were assembled there,  
or poor sorrow with heart weeped full fair.  
When Wallace felt their courage was so small,  
he fenzyed him for to comfort them all.

Lease men, he said, this is a bootlese bane,  
or we cannot chevis her life again.

Please a word he might bring out for teen,  
The baillfull tears burst braichly from his een :  
ighing he said : Shall never man me see  
lest into ease while this deed wroken be.

The sakeless slaughter of her, both blyth and bright  
hat I avow to the Maker of might,  
Of all that Nation I shall never forbear,  
young nor old that able is to wear.

ries nor women I think not for to sly,  
In my default, but if they causing mae.

Sir John, he said, let all this mourning be,  
And for her sake there shall ten thousand die.

Where

Where men may weep, their courage is the less,  
 It flrikes the yre of wrong they should redress.  
 Of their complaints as now I speak no mair.  
 Of Auchenleck in Kilbank dwelling there,  
 When he heard tell of Wallace vexation,  
 To Cartland wood with ten men made him bowne  
 Wallace he found some pale within the night,  
 To Lanerk Town in the haste they them dight.  
 The watch as then of them had little dread :  
 Parted their men, then diverse wayes yeed.  
 Sir John the Graham and his good company,  
 Unto Sir Robert Thorn full fast they hy :  
 Wallace and his to Hesilrig soon they past,  
 In an high house where he was sleeping fast :  
 Strake at the door with his foot hardily,  
 While bar and brayes in the floor gart he ly.  
 The Sheriff cryed, who makes this great deray ?  
 Wallace, he said, which thou hast sought this day  
 The womans death, will God, thou shalt dear by  
 Hesilrig thought it was no time to ly.  
 Out of the house full fain he would have been :  
 The night was mirk, yet Wallace hath him seen :  
 Fiercely him strake as he came in great yre,  
 Upon the head bristit through bone and lyre.  
 The shearing sword glaid to the shoulder bone,  
 Out over the stair amongst them he is gone.  
 Good Auchenleck crowed not that he was dead  
 Thrice with a knife he strake him in that stead.  
 The scry about rose rudely in that street,  
 Feil of the lave were fulziet under feet.  
 Young Hesilrig and wight Wallace is met,  
 A sikker stroake Wallace hath on him set,

fly to death over the stair dang him down :  
In that night he slew in Lanerk town.

The grieses lap, and some stickeid within,  
Reireid they were with hideous noise and din ?  
John the Graham had set the house in fire,  
Where Robert Thorn was burnt up bone and lyte.

Twelve score they slew that were of England born  
Women they lived and Preists, on the morn,  
Pass their way of bliss, and goods bare,  
And swore that they again should come no mair.

When Scots heard these fine tydings of new,  
Out of all parts to Wallace fast they drew :

Enisht the Town, which was their heritage,  
Thus Wallace strake against that great barnage.

He began with stiff and stalwart hand,  
To cheveis again some rooms in Scotland.

The worthy Scots that semblid to him there,  
Chosid him for Cheif, their Captain and leader.

Bymer Wallance a fellow tyrant Knight,  
Bothwell dwelt, King Edwards man full right.

Murray was out, though he was righteous Lord  
Of all that Land, as true men will record :

To Arane he was dwelling that tide,  
And other men in this Land durst not bide.

But this false Knight in Bothwel winning was.

A man he gart soon to King Edward pass,  
And told him whole of Wallace ordinance,  
How he had put his people to mischance,  
And plainly was rising again to reign :

Reived thereat right greatly was the King.  
Through all England he gart his doers cry,  
Power to get, and said he would plainly

In Scotland passe, that Realm to stakute new;  
Feil men of war to him right fast they drew.  
The Queen felte well how that his purpose was:  
To him she went, on knees then can she passe.  
He would desist, and not to *Scotland* gang,  
Ye shoulde have dread to work a felon wrang:  
Christned they are, yon is their heritage;  
To reave their Crown, it is a great outrage.  
For her counsel at home he would not bide,  
His Lords him feit in *Scotland* for to ride.  
The *Scots* man that dwelt with King *Edward*,  
When he heard tell that *Wallace* took such part,  
He stole from them as privily as he may,  
In *Scotland* then he came upon a day,  
Seeking *Wallace* he made him ready bown.  
This *Scot* was born in *Kyle* at *Richartown*,  
All *England* coast he knew it wonder well,  
From *Hull* about to *Bristow* every deal:  
From *Carlile* through *Sandwich* that royal stea  
From *Dover* over unto *Saint Bayes* head.  
In *Picardie* and *Flanders* boch had been,  
All *Normandie* and *France* hath he seen:  
A Purlevant to King *Edward* in wear:  
But he could never gar him arms bear.  
Of great stature, and some part gray was he;  
The *Englishmen* called him but *Grimsbie*.  
To *Wallace* came, and into *Kyle* him fand,  
He told him whole the tydings of *England*.  
They turned his name from time they him knew,  
And called him *Jop*, of engine he was true.  
In all his time good service in him fand,  
Gave him to bear the Arms of *Scotland*.

Wallace again in Cliddisdale soon he rade,  
And his power tembled withouten bade.  
He gart command, who wold his peace take,  
Free remit he should gar to him make,  
For all kind deed that they had done beforne.  
The Persies peace, and Sir Rannalds was worn.  
Also to him drew that boldly durst abide,  
Sir Wallace kin of many diverse side.  
Rannald then sent him his power hail,  
Himself durst not be known into battel  
Aginst Sutheron : for he had made a band,  
A long time before, to hold of them his land.  
Sir Adam Wallace past out of Richartown,  
And Robert Boyd, with good men of renown.  
Sir Cunningham and Kyle came men of vail,  
Sir Lanerk sought on horse a thousand hail.  
John the Graham, and his good Chevalry,  
John of Tinto with men that he might hy :  
Good Auchenleck that Wallace Uncle was,  
Any true Scots with their Chiftain could passe:  
Three thousand whole of likely men of wear,  
And fel on foot which wanted horse and gear.  
The time by this was coming upon hand,  
The awfull host with Edward of England.

### The Battel of Bigger.

O Bigger came with sixty thousand men,  
In war weeds that cruel was to ken.  
They planted there fel tents and pavilions,  
There Clarions blew with many mighty sounds.  
Enight that place with victual and wine ;  
Carts brought their purveyance full fine.

This

This awful King gart two *Heraulds* be brought  
 Gave them command in all the haste they mought  
 To charge *Wallace* that he should come him till  
 Without promise, and put him in his will :  
 Because I wot he is a Gentleman :  
 Come in my grace, and I shall save him than :  
 As for his life, I will upon me take :  
 And after this, if he will service make,  
 He shal have wage that may him well suffice :  
 That Rebald weens, for he hath done surprise  
 To my people, oft upon adventure,  
 Against me that he may long endure.  
 To this profer gain standing if he be,  
 Here I vow, he shal be hanged hie.

The young Squyer was brother to *Febew*,  
 Thought he would go disguised to pursue,  
*Wallace* to see that took so high a part :  
 Born sisters son he was to King *Edward*.  
 A coat of Arms he took on him but bade,  
 With the *Herauld* full privily forth rade,  
 To *Tinto* hill withoutten residence,  
 Where *Wallace* lay with his folk at defence :  
 A likely Hoast, as of so few they fand.  
 To him they sought, and would no longer stan :  
 If ye be he that ruleth all this thing,  
 Credence we have brought from our worthy K :  
 Then *Wallace* cauld three Knights unto him,  
 Then read the writ in presence of them all.  
 To them he said : Answerye shall not crave,  
 By word or writ, which likes you best to have,  
 In writ, they said, it were the likeliest :  
 Then *Wallace* thus began to dyte in haste.

g Thou reaver king thou chargest me through case  
 that I should come, and put me in thy grace :  
 If I gain stand, thou heighest to hang me,  
 vow to God, and ever I may take thee,  
 thou shalt be hanged an example to give,  
 To King of rief, as long as I may live.  
 Thou profers me, of thy wages to have,  
 thee defie, power and all the lave.  
 That helps thee here of thy stout Nation,  
 will God thou shalt be put from this Region.  
 Or die therefore, contrare though thou hadst sworn  
 Thou shalt us see before nine hours to morn,  
 Battel to give, manger of all thy kin,  
 For falslie thou seekest our Realm within.

This writ he gave to the Herauld but mair,  
 A good reward he gart deliver him there.  
 But Jop knew well the Squyer young Fehem,  
 And told Wallace, for he was very true.  
 He them commanded, that they should him take,  
 Himself began sore accusing to make.  
 Squyer, he said, since thou hast feigned arms,  
 Do thee so shal fall some part of these harms,  
 Example to give thy stout Nation.  
 Upon the hill he gart then set him down,  
 Strike off his head ere he would further go.  
 So the Herauld said then withouten ho :  
 Because to arms thou art false and mensworn,  
 Through thy cheek thy tongue shall be out shorn,  
 When that was done then to the third said he,  
 Arms to judge thou shalt never graithly see :  
 He gart a smith with a turkeis right there,  
 Pull out his eyes, then gave him leave to fare.

To your false King, thy fellow shall thee lead,  
With this answer, curse him his Nevoys head.  
Thus sore I dread the King and all his boast,  
His dumb fellow led him into the Holt.

When King Edward his Heralds thus had seen,  
In proper ire he grew near wood for teen,  
That he wist not in what wise him to wrape,  
For sorrow almost, one word he could not spe  
A long while he stood writhing in a rage,  
On loud he said, this is a fell outrage.

This deed to Scots full sore it shal be bought,  
So despitefull in world was never wrought.  
From this Region I think not for to gang,  
Till time that I shal see this Rebel hang.  
I let him thus in syte and sorrow dwell,  
Of the good Scots shortly I will you tell.

**F**orth from his men then Wallace railed right,  
To him he called Sir John Tinto the Knight,  
And let him wot, to visie he would go  
The English Host, and bade him tell no mo,  
What ever they spiered, till that he come agan  
Wallace disguised, thus bowned he over plain,  
Betwixt Culter and Bigger as he past,  
He was ware where a work-man came fast  
Driving a Mare, and Pitchers for to sell:  
Good friend, he said, in truth wilt thou me telle  
With this chauffray where passest thou truly?  
To any place, who liketh for to buy:  
It is my crast, and I would sell them fain.  
I will them buy, so God me help from pain.  
What price, let hear, I will have them ilk ane?  
But half a mark, for such price have I tane.

wenty shillings, Wallace said, thou shalt have :  
 will have mair, pitchers, and all the lave :  
 thy gown and hose, in haste put thou off syne,  
 and make a change, for I shall give thee mine :  
 and thine old hood, because it is threed-bare.  
 he man weend well he had scorned him there,  
 thou tarry nocht, it is sooth that I say.  
 he man cast vff his feeble weed of gray,  
 and Wallace his, then payed silver in hand,  
 is on, he said, thou art a bad merchand.  
 ne gown and hose in clay that clagged was,  
 ne hood heckled, and then made him to pass.  
 ne whip he took, and forth the mare can call,  
 tour the brae the upmost pot gart fall,  
 take on the ground : the men leugh at his fair,  
 at thou beware thou tines of thy chauffair.  
 the Sun by that was passed out of sight,  
 the day was gone, and comming was the night,  
 mongst the Sutheron full busily he past,  
 either side his eyes he can well cast,  
 w. Lords lay, and had their lodging made,  
 pavilion where that the Leopards bade,  
 wing full fast where his avail might be.  
 could well wink, and look up with one eye :  
 he scorned him, some glyd carle cald him there,  
 lieved they were of their Heralds missare.  
 he asked of him, how he sold of the best ?  
 four pennies, he said, while they may last,  
 he brake a part, some pricked at his eye.  
 Wallace laid out privatly, and let them be :  
 o the host again he passed right,  
 men by then had cane Tinto the Knight.

Sir John the Graham gart bid him wonder fast,  
 For he wist well he was with Wallace last.  
 Some bade burn him, some hang him in a cord  
 They swore that he deceived had their Lord.  
 Wallace by this was entred them among,  
 To him he yeed, and would not tarry long:  
 Then he gart loose him out of these bands soone  
 And said he was both sober, wise, and true.  
 To supper soon bowned but more abade,  
 He told to them what Market he had made,  
 And how that he the Sutheron saw full well.  
 Sir John the Graham displeased was some deal,  
 And said to him: Not Chiftain-like it was,  
 Through wilfulnesse in such peril to pass.  
 Wallace answered: Ere we win Scotland free,  
 Both ye and I in perill more must be,  
 And many other, the which full worthy is.  
 Now of one thing we do some part in miss,  
 A little sleep I would fain that we had,  
 With yon men then look how we may us glad.  
 The worthy Scots took good rest while near  
 Then rose they up, t'array soon ordain'd they.  
 The hill is left, and to a plain are gane,  
 Wallace himself the vanguard first hath tane:  
 With him was Boyd and Auchinleck but dread  
 With a thousand of worthy men in weed:  
 As many then in the middle-ward put he,  
 Sir John the Graham he gart their leader be;  
 With him young Adam the Lord of Richartow  
 Which doughty was, and als of great renown.  
 The third thousand in the Rere-ward he dight  
 To Walter gave of Newbigging the Knight.

With him *Tinto* that doughty was indeed,  
And *David*, son to *Sir Walter*, to lead :  
Behind them near the foot-men gart he be,  
And bade them bide while they their time might  
Yewant weapons and harness in this tide, (see ;  
The first counter ye may not them abide.

*Wallace* caus'd soon the Chiftain to him call,  
His charge he gave, for chance that may befall,  
To take no heed to gear, nor yet pillage,  
For they will flee as wood men in a rage.

With first the men, the goods then ye may have,  
And take no tent of covetise to crave :  
Through covetise men loose both goods and life :  
you command forbear such in our strife.

Look ye save none, Lord, Captain, nor yet Knight,  
For worship work and for our Elders right.

God bless us all, that we in our voyage,  
Put this ltout folk out of our heritage.

Then they inclined all wit ha good will,  
His plain command they heght it to fu fill.

On the great Host the parties can forth draw,  
Coming to them out of the South. they saw  
Three hundred men into their Armour clear,  
The gainest way to them approached near.

*Wallace* said soone, These are no *Englishmen*,  
Or by this Host the gates full well they ken.

From *Haliday* those men he guided right,  
From *Annandale* he had led them that night.

Two good sons *Johnstone* and *Rutherford*.

*Wallace* was blyth when that he heard that word  
He was the lave of that good Chevalry.

*Gordan* came there into their company,

And Kirkpatrick before in Eskdale was,  
 A wing they were in Wallace host to pass.  
 The English watch that night had been on steir,  
 Drew to their horse, right as the day can peir.  
*Wallace knew well (for he before had seen)*  
 The Kings pavilion, where it had busked been :  
 Then with rich horse the Scots upon them rade,  
 At the first counter so great a basing made,  
 That all the host astonisht at that sight,  
 Full many one derfle to death they dight.  
 Feil of them then were out of their array,  
 The more awfull and hasty was the fray.  
 The noise was budge through straiksthat they da  
 The rumour rose so rudely them among,  
 That all the host was then in poist to flee.  
 The wise Lords, fra they the peril see:  
 The fellow fray als raised was about,  
 And how their King stood in so meikle doubt ;  
 To his pavilion full many thousand sought,  
 Him to rescue by any way they mought.  
 The Earl of Kent that night waking had been,  
 With five thousand of men in Armour keen :  
 About the King full suddenly they gang,  
 And trust him well the assaillie was right strang.  
 All Wallace folk in use of war was good,  
 Into the stour soon lighted where they stood :  
 Whomsoever they hit, no harness might them sti  
 Fra they on foot assembled with swords dint.  
 Of man-hood they in hearts ful cruel was,  
 They thought to win, or never hence to pass.  
 Feil Englishmen before the King they flew ;  
 Sir John the Graham came with his power new;

Amongst the Host, with the middle-ward he rade,  
Great martyrdom on *Sutheron* men they made :  
The rere-ward then set on so hardily,  
With *Newbigging* and all their Chevalry.  
Pavilion-ropes they cutted all in sunder,  
Born to the ground, and many smoored under.  
The foot-men came, of which I speake of air,  
On frayed folks with strokes sad and fair :  
Though they before wanted both horse and gear,  
Enough they got, what they would weal to wear.  
The *Scots* power then altogether were,  
The Kings pavilion brimly down they beare,  
The Earl of *Kent* with a good axe in hand,  
Into the stour full stoutly he could stand  
Before the King, making a great debate :  
Who best did then, he had the highest state.  
The fellow stour so stalwart was and strong,  
Thereto continued marveilous and long.  
*Wallace* himself ful sadly could persue,  
And at a stroke the chief Captain he slew.  
The *Sutheron* folk fled fast, and durst not bide,  
Horsed their King, and off the field can ride.  
Agynst his will, he was ful loath to flee,  
Yet in that time he had no will to die.  
Of his best men three thousand there were dead,  
Ere he could find to flee, and leave that stead.  
Twenty thousand fled with him in a stail.  
The *Scots* got horse, and followed the Battel :  
Through *Culter* hope, before they wan the hight,  
Feil *Sutheron* folk were marred in the night,  
Slain by the gate, as their King fled away,  
But fair and bright, and right clear was the day;

The Sun risen, shining over hill and dale,  
 Then Wallace cast what was his best avail.  
 The fleeing folk that off the field first past,  
 Unto the King again assembled fast :  
 From either side so many assembled there ;  
 Then Wallace would let follow them no mair :  
 Before he rade, gart his folk turn again :  
 Of Englishmen seven thousand there was slain :  
 Then Wallace Host again to Bigger rade,  
 Where Englishmen great purveyance had made :  
 The Jewalty as they were hither led,  
 Pavillions and all they left when as they fled.  
 The Scots got gold, good gear, and other wage,  
 Relieved they were that parted that pillage.  
 To meat they went with great mirth & pleasance,  
 They spred not King Edwards purveyance.  
 With solace then a little sleep they took,  
 A privat watch he part amongst them look :  
 Two Cooks there fell, their lives then for to save,  
 Witch dead crosses, which lay unput in grave :  
 When they saw well the Scots-men were at rest,  
 Out of the field to steal they thought it best.  
 Full low they crept till they were out of sight,  
 After the Host then ran in all their might.  
 When that the Scots had slept but a while,  
 Then rose they up, for Wallace dreaded guile :  
 He said to them : The Sutheron may pursue  
 Again to us, for they are folk anew :  
 Where Englishmen provision make in wear,  
 It is full hard to do them meikle dear.  
 On this plain field we will not them abide,  
 To some good place my purpose is to ride.

the purveyance that left was in that stead,  
Roppis Bog he gart servants it lead,  
With ordinance that Sutheron brought on there.  
With his Host to David Shaw can fare,  
Here they remained a great part of the day.

If Englishmen yet something will I say :  
King Edward through Culter hope is sought,  
When he perceived the Scots followed nought,  
Johns Grave he gart his Host bide still :  
All fleeing folks assembled soon him till.

Then they were met, the King near waxed mad,  
For his dear kin that he there losed had.

Two Emes into the field were slain.  
Second son that meikle was of main.

His brother Hew was killed there full cold,  
The Earle of Kent that cruel was and bold,  
With great worship took dead before the King :  
For him he mourned so long as he might reign.

At this sembly as they in sorrow stand,  
The two cooks soon came in at his hand,  
And told to him how they escaped were,  
The Scots all as swine lyes drunken there,  
By your wight wine ye gart us thither lead,  
Full well ye may be venged of their deed,  
Upon their lives, is sooth that we you tell,  
Return again, ye shall find them your fell.

He blamed them, and said : No wit it was,  
That he again for such a tale should pass.

Their Chiftain is right marveilous in wear,  
From such peril he can them well forbear :  
For to seek more as now I will not ride,  
Our meat is lost, therefore we may not bide.

The hardy Duke of Longastle and Lord,  
 Sovereign, he said, to our counsel concord :  
 If this be true, we may the more avail,  
 We may them win, and make but light travel.  
 Were yon folk dead that now against us stand,  
 Then need we not for meat to leave the land.  
 The King answered ? I will not ride again,  
 As at this time, my purpose is in plain.

The Duke said : Sir, if ye determined be,  
 To move you more efferis not nnto me :  
 Command your power again with me to wend,  
 And I of this shall see the final end.

Ten thousand whole he charged for to ride.  
 Here is the strength, all night I shall you bide.  
 We may get meat for bestial in this land.

Good drink as now we may not bring in hand.  
 Of Westmurland the Lord had met him there,  
 On with the Duke he graithed him to fare :  
 At the first stroke with them he had not been,  
 With him he led a thousand well beseen :  
 And Picard Lord was with a thousand bown,  
 Of King Edward he keeped Calice town.

These twelve thousand into the town can fare:  
 The two Captains soon met them at Bigger,  
 With the whole stuff of Roxburgh and Berwick  
 Sir Ralph Gray saw that they were Sutheron like,  
 Out of the South approached to their sight.  
 He knew full well with him it was not right.  
 Aymer Wallange with his power came als,  
 King Edwards man, a tyrant Knight and false.  
 When they were met, they found not else there,  
 But dead corses, and they were spoiled bare.

Then

hen marvelled they where the *Scots* should be,  
f them about, appearance they could not see ;  
ut spyes them told, that came with Sir *Aymar*,  
*David Shaw* they saw them make repare,

hen fel *Sutheron* soon passed to that place :  
he watch was ware, and told it to *Wallace*.  
e warned the host out of the town to ryde,

*Ropis Bog* he purposed to byde.

little shaw upon the one side was,  
hat men on foot out of the Bog might pass.

the horse they left into that little hold,

a foot they thought the Moss that they should  
he *English* host had well their passage seen. (hold  
nd followed fast with cruel men and keen.

hey trow'd that Bog might make them little avail  
rown over with rispe, and all the swaird was hail;  
n them to ride, they ordained with great yre,  
f the foremost a thoulard in the myre.

f horse with men are plunged in the deep.

he *Scots* of their coming took good keep :

pon them set with straiks sad and sair,

eed none away of all that entred there.

ight men on foot upon them derly dang,

eil under horse was smoored in that thrang;

tamped in Moss, and with rude horse overgane ;

he worthy *Scots* the dry land then have tine,

Upon the lave fighting full wonder fast,

nd many groom they made full sore ag st.

The *Englishmen* that busie were in wear,

ayled sore them from the Moss to bear,

On either side : but then it was no boot,

As strength they held right awfully on foot ;

To men and horse gave many grievous wound.  
 Feil to the death they sticked in that stound.  
 The *Picard* Lord assayled sharply there,  
 Upon the *Graham*, with straiks sad and sare :  
 Sic *John* the *Graham* with a stiff sword of steel,  
 His bright birnis he peirced every deal,  
 Through all the stuff, and sticked him in that stead  
 Thus of his dint the bold *Picard* was dead.  
 The *English* Host took plain part for to flee,  
 In their returning the *Scots* gart many die.  
*Wallace* would fain at the *Wallange* have been ;  
 Of *Westmoreland* the Lord was them between.  
*Wallace* on him he set an awfull dint,  
 Through basnet and stuff, that no steel might ou  
 Derly to death he left him in that place, (stint  
 So that false Knight escaped through this case.  
 Good *Robert Boyde* hath with a Captain met,  
 Of *Barmick* then, a sad straike on him set,  
 Overthort the craig, and carved the pesane,  
 Through all his weed in sonder strake the bane.  
 Eail horse-men fled fast, and durst not abyde,  
 Rebuted evil, unto the King they ryde.  
 The Duke him told of all his journey hail,  
 His heart for yre boldned in bitter bail,  
 Highly he thought he should never *London* see,  
 On *Wallace* deed, while he revenged be,  
 Or lose his men again, as he did aye :  
 Thus south he sought with greate sorrow and care  
 Then at the Kirk a little tarry made,  
 Then through the land over *Sulmey* fast they rad  
 The *Scots* Host a night remained still,  
 Upon the moor they spoiled with good will.

The dead corps carried to Braidwood was with care  
a counsell three dayes they sojourned there :  
at the Forrest Kirk a meeting ordained he :  
they choos'd Wallace, Scots Warden for to be,  
tulsting he should their painful sorrow cease,  
he received all that would come in his peace.

William came that Lord of Dowglas was,  
forsook Edward, at Wallace peace can ask :  
that thirlage he would no longer be.  
tribute before to England payed he.

In contrair Scots with them he never rade,  
at better chear Wallace therefore him made.  
thus treated he and cherist wonder fair,  
true Scottishmen that fewty made him there,  
and gave full greatly feil goods that he wan,  
despated it nought to no good Scottishman.

Who would rebell, and go contrair the right,  
He punisht sore, were he Squyer or Knight.

Thus marveilously good Wallace took in hand.  
likely he was, right fair, and well farrand,  
Manly and stout, and therewith liberal,  
Pleasant and wise, in all good general.

To slay forsooth Sutheron he spared nought.

To Scottishmen full great profit he wrought.

into the South forsooth then passed he,  
As him best thought he ruled that Countries.

Sheriffs he made that cruel was and keen.

And Captains of true wise Scots-men.

From Gamylispath the land obeyed him hail,

To Ur water both strength; Forrest and dail.

Against him in Galloway house was none,

Except Wigtown bigged of lime and stone..

That Captain heard the ruling of Wallace.  
 Away by sea he stole out of that place :  
 Leaved all waste, and could to England wend :  
 But Wallace soon a keeper to it send,  
 A good Squyer, and to name he was call'd  
*Adam Gordoun*, as the story me tald.

**A** Strength there was at the water of *Cree*,  
 Within a rock right stalwart wrought of cre  
 A gate before, no man might to it win,  
 But the consent of them that dwelt therein.  
 On the back-side a rock and water was,  
 A strait entry forsooth there was to pass :  
 To vissly it, Wallace himself soon went :  
 Fra he it saw, he cast in his intent  
 To win the hold : he hath chosen a gate,  
 That they within should make little debate.  
 His power whole he gaſt bide out of sight,  
 But three with him, while time that it was night  
 Then took two when that the night was dim,  
 Steven of Ireland and Keirly that could clim,  
 Up soon they went against that rock so strong,  
 Thus entred they the *Sutheron* men among,  
 The watch before took no heed to that side,  
 These three in feir soon to the Porter glyde :  
 Good Wallace then strake the Porter himself,  
 Dead over the rock into the dike he fell,  
 Let down the bridge, and blew the horn on hight,  
 The bushment brake, and came in all their might :  
 At their own will soon entred in that place :  
 To Englishmen they did full little grace.  
 Sixty they slew, in that place was no mo,  
 But an old Priest, and ſimple women two.

Great purveyance was in that Rock to spend,  
 Wallace staid still while it was at an end. (all,  
 take down the strength, both bridge & bulwark  
 ut over the Rock they gart the timber fall :  
 under the gate, and would no longer bide.  
 Carrick then they bowned them to ride :  
 scolded them not, but soberly can fare,  
 to Turnbury : that Captain was at Aire :  
 with Lord Pierse to take his counsel haile,  
 Wallace purpoled that place for to assaile :  
 woman told when the Captain was gone,  
 good men offence into that stead was none :  
 they filled the dyke with earth and timber haile,  
 when fired the house, no succour might availe :  
 Priest there was, and gentle women therein,  
 which in their manner made hideous noise & din.  
 mercy they cryed, for him that died on tree,  
 Wallace gart slak the fire, and let them be.  
 to make defence, no mo was leaved there,  
 le them commanded out of the land to fare :  
 spoiled the place, and spilt all that they mought,  
 pon the morn to Cumnoke soon they sought.  
 to Lanerk then, and set a time of aire,  
 Indoers feil he gart be punisht there.  
 to the good true men he gave a noble wage,  
 his brothers sons put to their heritage.  
 to the black Craig of Cumnoke past again,  
 his household set with men of meikle main.  
 three moneths there he dwelt into good rest,  
 he subtile Sutheron found well it was the best  
 news to take, for to eschew a chance.  
 to further this, they sent for Knight Wallace :

Bothwell

Both wel yet that traytor keeped still,  
 And Aire all whole was at Lord Pierfies will.  
 Through great supply of the Captain of Aire,  
 The Bishop Beik in Glasgow he dwelt there.  
 Earl of Stanfurd was Chancelour of England,  
 With Sir Aymar this traitor took on hand,  
 To procure Peace by any manner of case :  
 A safe conduct they purchast of Wallace :  
 In Ruglan Kirk the cryst there have they set,  
 And promise made to meet Wallace but let.  
 The day of this approached wonder fast,  
 The great Chancelour and Aymar thither past;  
 Then Wallace came, and his men well beseen,  
 With him fifty, arrayed all in green ;  
 Ilk one of them a bow and arrows bear,  
 With long swords, the which full sharply shear.  
 Within the Kirk so soon they entred had,  
 Unto his prayer he past but more abade :  
 Then up he rose, and to his cryst he went,  
 And his good men full cruel of intent.  
 In yre he grew, that traytor when he saw,  
 The Englishmen of his face stood great aw :  
 Wit ruled him that he did none outrage.  
 The Earle beheld fast to his high courage :  
 For thought some part that he came to that place  
 Greatly abased for the volt of his face.  
 Sir Aymar said : This speech ye must begin,  
 He will not bow to no Prince of your kin.  
 All ordered ye are. I trust you may speak well,  
 For all England he will not break a deal,  
 His safe conduct where he makes a band :  
 The Chancelor then proffered him his hand :—

Wallace stood still, and could no hands take,  
Friendship to them no likelinesse would make.

Aymar said: Wallace, ye understand,  
this is a Lord, and Chancelor of England:  
salute him ye may by proper skill.

With short advise he made answer him till:  
With saluting I use to Englishmen,

shall they have where ever I may them ken.  
By my power, that make I God a vow,

out of conduct if that I had him now;  
But for my life, and all my land so brade,

will not break the promise that is made.  
had rather at mine own will have thee,

Without conduct, that I might wroken be  
of thy false deed thou doest in this Region,  
than of pure gold a King with his ransom.

But for my band, I will as now let be.

Chancelor, say forth what ye desire of me.

The Chancelor said, The most part of this thing,  
to procure peace, I am sent from the King,  
With the great Seal, and voice of his Parliament:  
What I binde here, our barnage shall consent.

Wallace answered: Over little mends we have,  
when of our right ye occupy the lave:

Quite clame our land, and we shall not deny.

The Chancelor said, Of no such charge have I.

We will give gold, ere our purpose should fail.

Then Wallace said, In waste is that travel:

Ye ask no gold by favour of your kin,

In war of you we take what we may wi-

chased he was to make answer again.

Wallace said, Sir, we jangle all in vain:

My counsel gives, I will no fable make,  
As for a final peace now to take.  
Not for my self, that I bind to your seal,  
I cannot trow that ever you will be leal.  
But poor folk that greatly have been supprised,  
I will take peace, while further ye be advised.  
Then bound they thus, there should be no debate  
Castles and Towns should stand in their ilk state,  
From that day forth, while a year was at end :  
Sealed this Peace, and took their leave to wend,  
Wallace from them passed into the West,  
Made plain repare where that him liked best.  
Yet sore he dread that they should him deceive;  
The Indentour to Sir Rannald he gave,  
His dear Uncle, where it might keeped be.  
In Cumnoke then to his dwelling went he.

*The end of the sixth Book.*

## THE SEVENTH BOOK

### CHAP. I.

How Wallace burnt the Barns of Aire, and p  
Bishop Beik out of Glasgow, & slew Lord Percy

**I**N Februar befell the famine case,  
That Englishmen took trews with Wallace :  
This passeth over till March away was sough  
The Englishmen cast all the wayes they mough,  
With subtile and wicked conclusion,  
The worthy Scots to put to confusion.  
Into April the King of England came  
In Cumberland, to Pumfret from his barae :

unto Carlile to a counsel he yeed,  
 Whereof the Scots might have full meikle dread.  
 Many Captains that were of England born,  
 bithir they past, semblid their King beforne.  
 No Scots-man to counsel was there call'd,  
 but Sir Aymer that traytor was of ald : (hand,  
 At him they spiered : How they should take in  
 the righteous blood to stroy out of Scotland ?  
 Sir Aymer said : Their Chiftain can well do,  
 right wise in war, and hath great power too :  
 And now this trewes gives them such hardement,  
 that to your faith they will not all consent :  
 What would ye do right, as I can you leas,  
 his Peace to them it should be sold full dear.  
 Then deemed he the fierce Sutheron amang,  
 how they best might the Scots Barrons hang.  
 Our great Barns at that time stood in Aire,  
 wrought for the King, when his bigging was there  
 gged about that no man enter might,  
 at one at once, nor have of other sight :  
 Justice made which was of meikle main,  
 were ordained they these Lords should be slain :  
 The Lord Piercie of this matter they laid,  
 with sad advise again to them he said :  
 These men with me have kepted truth so lang,  
 receiptfully I may not see them hang :  
 Am their foe, and warn will I them nought :  
 I be quite, I care not what be wrought.  
 From thence I will, and toward Glasgow draw,  
 with out Bishop to hear of his new law.  
 Then choosled they a Justice fierce and fell,  
 which Arnulfe heght, as mine Author will tell,

Of South Hampton he heght both heir and Lord  
He undertook to pine them with a cord.

Another Heir in Glasgow ordained they,  
For Cliddisdale men to stand the self-same day.  
Then charged them in all wayes earnestly.

By no kind mean Wallace should scape them by:  
For wel they wist, and these men were overthrow  
They might at will brook Scotland as their own.  
This band they closed under theit seals full fast,  
They sought over mure again King Edward palt,  
The new Justice received was in Aire.

The Lord Persie can unto Glasgow fare.

This Heir was set in Iune the eighteen day,  
And plainly cryed no free men were away.

The Scots marvelled, and peace tane in the Land  
Why Englishmen such mastery took in hand.

Sir Rannald set a day before this Heir,  
At Monkton Kirk, his friends to meet him ther  
William Wallace unto the tryst can pass,  
For he as then Warden of Scotland was.

Thus Master John a worthy Clerk was there,  
His kin he charged to bide from that Heir.  
Right well he wist fra Persie left that Land,  
Great peril was to Scots appearand.

Wallace from them into the Kirk he yeed,  
Pater noster he said, and als a Creed,  
Then to the Grece leaned him soberly,  
Upon a sleep he fell full suddenly.

Celand followed, and saw him fall on sleep,  
He made no noyse, but wisely couth him keep:  
In that slumber coming he thought he saw  
A stalwart man, that toward him couth draw.

ord by the hand he hint him hastilie,  
n, he said, in voyage charged to thee,  
word him gave of barely burnisht steel,  
odson, he said, this sword thou shalt brook well.  
Topasian he thought the plummata was,  
y: h hilt and all, glittering as the glass.  
owr son, he said, we tarry here too long,  
n. you shalt go see where wrought is meikle wrong  
, en he him led to a mountain on hight,  
st. the world he thought he might see at one sight:  
left him there, and then from him he went,  
ereof Wallace studied in his intent,  
see him there he had full great desire,  
etewith he saw begin a fellon fire,  
and which braithly burnt broadly out throghe the Land  
tland all over, from Ross to Sulway land.  
ens on to him descended there a Queen,  
erminate, bright, shining full bright and sheen:  
her presence appeared so meikle light,  
at all the fire she put out of his sight:  
ve him a wand of colour red and green,  
tha saphir sayned his face and een:  
lcome, she said, I choose thee to my love:  
ou art granted, by the great God above,  
help people that suffer meikle wrong:  
th thee as now I may not tarry long,  
ou shalt return to thine own Host again,  
y dearest kin are here in meikle pain,  
s right Region thou must redeem it all,  
last reward on earth shall be but smal.  
not therefore, take redress of this miss,  
thy reward thou shalt have heavens bliss.

Of her right hand she betaught him a book,  
Humbly thus her leave then she took ;  
Unto the clouds ascended out of sight.

*Wallace* took up the book in all his might :

In three parts the book well written was,

The first letters were grosse letters of brass,

The second go'd, the third fine silver sheen ;

*Wallace* marvelled what this writing should me

To read the book he basied him so fast,

His sp'rit again to weakening mind it past :

And up he rose, then suddenly forth went,

This Clerk he found, and told him his intent

Of his vision, as I have said before,

Compleatly forth, what needs words more ?

Dear son, he said, my wit unable is

To ratifie such, for dread I say amiss :

Yet will I deem, though my cunning be small ;

God grant that no charge after my words fall.

That stalwart man gave thee that sword in han

*Fergus* it was, first winner of *Scotland* :

That mountain is where he had thee on height,

Knowledg to have of wrong which thou must ri

That fire shall be fel tydings ere ye part,

Which will be told in many sundry airt.

I cannot wot what Queen that that will be,

But it be Fortune, a Lady whiles right free.

The pretty wand, I crow by mine intent,

Betokens rule, and cruel chastisement.

The red colour who graithly understood,

Betokens all to great battell and blood.

The green, courage, that thou art now among

In trouble and war thou shalt continue long.

the iasphir stone she blessed thee withall,  
happy chance, will God, shall to thee fall.  
the three-fold book is but this broken Land,  
you must redeem, by worthiness of hand,  
the brafs letters do but betoken this,  
the great oppresſ of war, and meikle miss,  
the which thou must bring to the right again :  
it thou therefore shalt suffer meikle pain.

the gold betokens honour and worthiness,  
ector in arms, man-hood and nobleness.  
the silver shows clean life, and heavens bliss  
thy reward, that mirth thou shalt not miss.  
read not therefore, be out of all despair :  
ther as now hereof I can no mair.

rethanked him. and thus his leave hath tane,  
*Corſbie* then with his Uncle rade hame :  
ith mirths thus all night sojourned there.  
pon the morn they graithed them to *Aire*,  
d forth they rade till they came to *Kincace* :  
ith dreadfull heart thus speired good *Wallace*,  
Sir *Rannald*, for their Charter of Peace.  
voy, he said, these words are no lies,  
leaved at *Corſbie* in the kist,

here thou it laid, thereof none other wist.  
*Wallace* answered, Had we it here to shaw,  
d they be false, we shall not enter aw.  
arson, he said, I pray thee passe again,  
ough thou would send, thy travel were in vain,  
t thou or I, none can it bring this tide.  
eat grace it was made him again to ride.

*Wallace* returned, took none with him but three  
ne of them knew of this Indentour but he.

Unhap him led, forbid him could he nought,  
 Of false deceit this good Knight had no thought  
 Sir Rannald rade but resting to the town,  
 Witting nothing of all this false treasoun :  
 That wicked Sign so ruled that Planet.  
*Saturn* as then was in his highest state,  
 Above *Juno* in his melancholy,  
*Jupiter* and *Mars* ay cruel of envy :  
*Saturn* as then advanced his nature,  
 Of tyranny he power had and cure.  
 Rebels rules in many free Nation.  
 Troublous weather makes many ships to drown  
 His dreiching was with *Pluto* in the sea,  
 As of the Land full of iniquitie.  
 He wakens war full of Pestilence,  
 Filling of walls with cruel violence :  
 Poison is rife amongst thete other things,  
 Sudden slaughter of Emperours and Kings.  
 When *Sampson* pulled to the ground the pillars  
*Saturn* was then into his highest spheare.  
 At *Thebes* als of his power they tell,  
*Amphiaraus* sank through the earth to hell.  
 Of the *Trojan* he had full meikle cure,  
 When *Achilles* at *Troy* slew good *Hectore*.  
*Burdeous* shent, and many Cities mo,  
 His power yet he hath no hap to ho.  
 In broad *Britane* feil vengeance hath been seen,  
 Of this, and more, ye wot well what I mean.  
 But to this house that stalwart was and strong,  
 Sir Rannald came, and might not tarry long.  
 A balk was knit all full of ropes keen,  
 Such a Tol-booth since then was never seen.

Strong men were set the entry for to hald,  
None might win in, but one as they were cald :  
Sir Rannald first, to make fewty for his land :  
The Knight went in and would no langer stand.

A running cord they slipped over his head,  
Held to the balk, and hanged him to the dead.

Sir Brice the Blair next after in he past,  
Unto the death they hasted him full fast :  
By he was entred, his head was in the snare,  
Knit to the balk, hanged to death right there.

The third entred, great pity was for thy,  
A gentle Knight, Sir Neil Montgomery ;  
And other feil of landed men about.

Many went in, but no Scots man came out,  
Of Wallace part they put to that derf dead,  
Many Crawfords so ended in that stead.

Of Carrick men Kennedies slew they als,  
And kind Campbells, that never had been false.

They rebelled not against their righteous Crown,  
Inbheron for they put them to confusion.

Barklyes, Boydys, and Stewarts of good kin ;  
No Scot escaped that time that entred in.

Upon the balk they hanged many pair,  
Beside them dead, in a nook cuist them there ?  
Since the first time that any war was wrought,  
So such a death so many yeed there nought,

Upon one day through cursed Saxons seed :

Revengeance of this out through the kinred yeed ;

Granted it was from the great God of heaven,  
Ordained that law should be their steven,

To the false Saxons, for their false judgement,  
Their wickednesse over all the world is went.

Ye Noble men that are of *Scottish* kind,  
 Their piteous death ye keep it in your mind,  
 And us revenge when we are set in throng ;  
 Dolour it is hereon to tarry long.  
 Thus eighteen score derly to death they dight,  
 Of Barons bold, and many worthy Knight.  
 When they had slain the worthiest was there,  
 For weak people no longer would they spare.  
 Into the gaith cult them out off that stead,  
 As they were born, spoiled, bare, and dead.  
 Good *Robert Boyd* into the tavern yeed,  
 With twenty men that doughty were indeed :  
 Of *Wallace* house, full cruel of intent,  
 He govern'd them, when *Wallace* was absent.  
*Keirly* returned with his Master again,  
*Cleland* and *Boyd* that meikle were of mair;  
*Steven of Ireland* went forth into the street,  
 A true woman full soon with him could meet :  
 He speired at her, What happened in *Aire* ?  
 Sorrow, she said, is nothing else there.  
 Fear'dly she said, Alace where is *Wallace* ?  
 From us again he passed at *Kincase*.  
 Go warn his folk, and charge them off the town;  
 To keep himself, I shall be ready bown.  
 With her as then no more tarry he made,  
 To his fellows he went withouten bade,  
 And to them told of all this great misfares.  
 To *Laglane wood* they bowned withouten mair  
 By this *Wallace* was coming wonder fast,  
 For his friends he was full sore agast :  
 Unto the Barn sadly he could persue,  
 To enter in, for he no peril knew,

his true woman upon him loud can call:  
 feirs *Wallace*, feil tempeit is befal,  
 ur best men slain, great pity is to see,  
 s bestial hounds hanged over a tree;  
 ur true Barrons by two and two past in.  
*Wallace* weeped for great loss of his kin,  
 hat with unease upon his horse he bade,  
 ore for to spier to this woman he rade:  
 ear Nice, he said, if thou the truth can tel',  
 mine Eme dead? Or how the case befel?  
 ut of yon Barn forsooth, I saw him born,  
 aked, laid low, and cold earth him beforne.  
 is frosty mouth I kissed in thair stead,  
 ight now manlike, now bare & brought to dead;  
 end with a cloath I covered his lichame;  
 or in his life he did never woman shame.  
 is sisters son thou art, worthy and wight,  
 evenge his death, for God's sake, at thy might:  
 is I shall help, as I am woman true.  
 ear wight, he said, great God if that thou knew  
 god *Robert Boyd*, where ever thou can him see,  
 illiam *Crawfurd* also, if he living be:  
 adam *Wallace* would help me in this strife:  
 say to God to send them all on life.  
 or God's sake bid them soon come to me:  
 he Justice *Innes* thou spy for charity,  
 nd in what fear that they their lodging make:  
 on after that we shal our purpose take.  
 to *Laglane* which hath their succour been,  
 due Market, and welcome goods green,  
 ereof as then to her he spake no mair,  
 is bridle turned, and from her can he fare:

Such mourning made for his dear worthy kin,  
 He thought for bail, his breast near burst in twi  
 As he thus rade in great anger and teen,  
 Of Englishmen there followed him fifteen,  
 Wight waied men, that toward him could dr  
 With a Macer, to teach him to the Law :  
*Wallace* returned in grief and maltalent,  
 With his sword drawn, amongst them soon he wen  
 The middle of one he manked soon in twa,  
 The other there upon the head can ta,  
 The third he strake, & through the coast him cl  
 The fourth to ground right derfly down he dr  
 The fifth he hit in great yre in that stead,  
 Without rescue dreadles he left them dead.  
 Then his three men had slain the other five,  
 From them the lave escaped with their life :  
 Fled to their Lord, and told him of this case.  
 To *Langlane* wood then rode wight *Wallace*.  
 The *Sutheron* said : What one he hit right,  
 Without mercy dreadles to death was dight.  
 Marvel they had such strength in one should be  
 One of their men at each straik he gart die.  
 Then deemed they it should be *Wallace* wight,  
 To their language then answered an old Knight  
 Forsooth, he said, be he escaped this heir,  
 All your new deed, is eeking of your care.  
 The Justice said, when there such rumours ro  
 Ye would be feared and there came many foes,  
 That for one man, me think ye like to flee,  
 And wots not yet indeed if it be he :  
 And tho it were, I count him but full light,  
 Who bides here, each Gentleman shall be Kn

think to deal their lands whole the morn,  
o you about that are of *England* born.

The *Sutheron* drew to their lod ging but mair,  
our thousand whole that night was into *Aire*,  
n great Barns bigged without the town,  
he Justice lay, with many bold Barron.

Then he gart cry about these wains wyde,  
o *Scots* bairn amongst them there should bide.  
o the Castle he would not pass for eale, (please  
ut sojourned there with things that might him  
reat purveyance by sea was to them brought,  
ith wine and *Aile*, the best that could be bought,  
o watch was set, because they had no doubt  
f *Scots*-men that living was without.

aboured in mind they had been all that day,  
f *Aile* and wine enough chosen had they,  
s beast-like folk took of themselves no keep,  
their veins soon fluid the sloathful sleep :  
through foul gluttony in swair swapped like swine  
heir Chiftain was great *Bacchus* god of wine.  
his wise woman long time amongst them was,  
il men she warned, and gart to *Laglane* pass,  
er self foremost : when they with *Wallace* met,  
ome comfort then into his heart was set.

hen he them saw, he thanked God of might,  
dings he asked, the woman told him right,  
eeping as swine are all yon fierce meinie,  
o *Scots* man is in yon companie.

hen *Wallace* said : If they all drunken be,  
all it best with fire them for to see.

good men three hundred to him sought:  
e woman sold three true Burgesses that broght

Out of the town both noble Ale and bread,  
And other buff, as meikle as they might lead.  
They ate and drank, the Scots men that mought,  
The Nobles then, *so* hath to Wallace brough  
Sadly he said : Dear friends, now ye see,  
Our kin are slain, therefore is great pitie,  
Through foul murther, the great despite is more  
Now some remead I would we set therefore :  
Suppose that I was made Warden to be,  
Part are away, such charge is put to me,  
And ye are here come in of als good blood,  
And righteous born, by adventure als good.  
Als foreward fair, als likely in person,  
As ever I was : then for conclusion,  
Let us choose five of this good companie,  
Then Cavels cast who shal our Master be:  
*Wallace* and *Boyd*, and *Crawfurd* of renown,  
And *Adam* als then Lord of *Richartown*.  
His father then was visied with sickness,  
God hath him tane into his lasting grace :  
The fifth *Auchinleck*, in war a noble man :  
Cavels to cast about the five began.  
It woud on him, for ought they would devise  
Continually, while they had casten thrise.  
Then *Wallace* rose, and out a sword can draw :  
He said : I vow to the Maker of aw,  
And to Mary his Mother Virgin clear,  
Mine Uncles death now shall be sold full dear,  
With many mo of our dear worthy kin :  
First ere I eat or drink, I shall begin :  
For sleath or sleep shal never remain with me,  
Of this tempest while I avenged be :

hen all inclined right humble of one accord,  
nd him received as their Chiftain and Lord.  
llace a Lord he may be taken well,  
ough rural folk thereof have little feell.  
hey deeme no Lord, but lands be their part.  
ad he the world, and be wretched in heart,  
e is no Lord : but to the worthiness :  
cannot be but freedom, Lordliness.  
t the Rods they make full many one,  
Which worthy are, yet lands have they none.  
his discussing we leave *Herauld*s to end,  
nto my matter briefly I will wend.

*Wallace* commanded a Burgesis for to get  
ine calk enough, that his dear Nise might set,  
at ilk gate where *Sutheron* were on a raw,  
nd twenty men he gart soon widdies thraw.  
Each man upon his Arms a pair he threw,  
Unto to the town full fast they can persue.  
The woman past before him subtilly,  
Calked each gate, they needed not go by,  
Then fastned they the doors with widdies fast,  
To stafil and hespe, with many sikker cast.  
*Wallace* gart *Boyd* near hand the Castle gi,  
With fifty men a jeopardy to ma :  
If any escape the fire when that they saw,  
All fast the gate he ordained them to draw :  
The rest with him about the Barns yeed :  
This true woman him served well indeed :  
With lint and fire that hasty kendle would,  
In every nook they fastned bleales bold.  
*Wallace* commanded to all his men about,  
No *Sutheron* men that they should let break out.

What ever he be, rescues of their kin,  
 From the red fire, himself shall pass therein;  
 The lemand low soon lunched upon hight,  
 Forsooth, he said, this is a pleasant sight:  
 To our hearts it shall be some redress,  
 Were these away, their power were the less.  
 Unto the Justice himself on loud can caw,  
 Let us to brugh our men from your false Law,  
 That living are, and scaped from your heir,  
 Deal not their land, the unlaw is over fair:  
 Thou hadst no right, it shal on thee be seen;  
 The rumour rose with careful cry and keen.  
 The bail-fire burnt right brimly upon loft,  
 To sleeping men their wakning was unsoft.  
 The sight without mas awfull for to see,  
 In all the world no greater pain might be,  
 Then they within suffered for to dwel,  
 That ever was wrought, or Purgatory, but Hell.  
 A pain of Hell well near it may be call'd,  
 Made folk in fire hampered manyfold.  
 Feil biggings burnt that worthy were and wight,  
 Got none away, knave, Captain, nor Knight,  
 When brands fell of roof-trees them among.  
 Some rudely rose in bitter pains strong,  
 Some naked burnt with belches all away,  
 Some never rose, but smoored where they lay,  
 Some rushed fast to *Aire*, if they might win,  
 Blinded with fire, their deeds were full dim.  
 The reek filled with filth of carion,  
 Amongst the fire right foul of infection:  
 The people beired like wood beasts in that tyde,  
 Within the wall ramping on either syde,

smisht with rueth, and many griesly groan,  
 me grimly grath, while ther life days were gone;  
 me doors sought the entry for to get,  
 at Scots-men so wisely them beset,  
 any brake by adventure of that stead,  
 with swords soon brimed they were to dead,  
 else again by force driven in the fire:  
 here scaped none, but burnt bone and lyre.  
 the stink skailed of dead bodies so wide,  
 the Scots abhorred near hand them for to byde,  
 need to the wind, and let them even alone,  
 while the red fire had that fierce blood overgone.  
 Frier, Drumlaw, was Pryor then of Aire,  
 even score with him that night took harby there,  
 into his Innes, for he migh not them let.  
 While near mid-night a watch on them he set,  
 himself woke well, while he the fire saw rise,  
 some mends he thought to take of that surprise.  
 His brethren seven soon to harness they yeed,  
 himself Chifain, the remenant to lead.  
 The best they wail of armour and good gear,  
 then weapons took right awfull in effeir.  
 These eight Friers in three parts they go,  
 With swords drawn, in every house yeed two.  
 Soon entred in where Sutheron sleeping were,  
 Upon them set with straik sad and fair:  
 Feil freiks there the Friers dang to dead:  
 Some naked fled, and got out of that stead.  
 The water sought, abased out of sleep:  
 In the Friers well that was both long and deep,  
 Feil of them fell, that brake out of that place,  
 Drowned to ground, and dead withouten grace.

Slain and drowned was all that harbored there,  
 Men calls it yet, The *Friers* blessing of *Aire*.  
 Few folk of vail was leaved upon case  
 In the Castle, Lord *Perſie* from that place;  
 Before the Heir from thence to *Glasgow* drew,  
 Of wine and stuff, it was to purvey new.  
 Yet they within saw the fire burning stout,  
 With ſhort advise iſhed, and made no doubt:  
 The buſtment then, as vvarriours vviſe and vvigh,  
 Let them alone, and to the house paſt right.  
*Boyd* wan the port, entred with all his men,  
 Keepers in it weie left but nine or ten.  
 The formoſt ſoon himſelf ſeaſed in hand,  
 Made quite of him, then ſlew all that he fand.  
 Of purveyance in the Castle was none,  
 Short time before from it *Perſie* was gone.  
 The Earl *Arnulff* had perceived that hold,  
 Who in the town was burnt to powder cold.  
*Boyd* gart remain of his men twenty ſtill,  
 Himſelf paſt forth to wit of *Wallace* will.  
 Keeping the town white nought was leaved there,  
 But the wood fire, and biggings burnt full bare.  
 O' likely men that were born of *England*,  
 By ſword and fire, that night died five thouſand.  
 When *Wallace* men were well together met,  
 Good freinds he ſaid, ye knew that there was ſet,  
 Such law as this now into *Glasgow* town,  
 The Bishop *Beik*, and *Perſie* of renoun:  
 Therefore I will in hafte ye thichter fare,  
 Of our good kin ſome part is loſed there.  
 He gart ſoon the Burgeſſes to him call,  
 And gave command in general to them all.

In keeping they should take the house of *Aire*,  
 And hold it whole, while time that we hear mair.  
 To bide our King, Castles I would we had.  
 Cast we down all, we may be deemed too bad.  
 They gaist meat come, for he had fasted lang ;  
 Little he took, then bowned him to gang.  
 Hoise they choose that *Sutheron* had brought  
 Anew at will, and off the town can fare. (here,  
 Right wonder fast rode this good Chevalty,  
 Three hundred whole was in that company ;  
 To *Glasgow* bridge, that bigged was of tree,  
 Soon passed over, ere *Sutheron* might them see ;  
 Lord *Persie* wight, that busie was in wear,  
 Sembléd his men right awfull in effeit,  
 Then deemed they all that it was wight *Wallace*,  
 He had before escaped through many case.  
 The Bishop *Beik*, and *Persie* that was wight,  
 A thousand led of men in Arms bright.  
*Wallace* saw well what number sembléd there,  
 He made his men in two parts for to fare,  
 Graithed them well without the towns end,  
 He called *Auchinleck*, for he the passage kend.  
 Jackle, he said, be buiy in the wear,  
 Whether will ye the Bishops tail up bear,  
 Or pass before, and take his bennison.  
 He answered him with right short provision :  
 Unbischopped yet, forsooth, I trow ye be,  
 Your self shal first his blessing take for me :  
 For sikkerly ye served it best to night,  
 To bear his tail we shall with all our might.  
*Wallace* answered : Since we must sundry ging,  
 Tell it is if ye bide from us lang :

For you are men will not be soon agast,  
 Fra time we meet, for Gods sake by you fast.  
 Our sundring I would no *Sutheron* saw,  
 Behind them come in throw the North-east raw.  
 Good men of war are in *Northumberland*.  
 They parted thus, took other by the hand.  
*Auchinleck* said : We shall do as we may,  
 We would like evil to bide ought long away,  
 A boistous stail betwixt us soon must be ;  
 But to the right Almighty God have eye.  
*Adam Wallace* and *Auchinleck* was bown,  
 Seven score with them on back-side of the town.  
 Right fast they yeed, while they were out of sight  
 The other part arrayed them full right.  
*Wallace* and *Boyd* the plain street up can go,  
 The *Sutheron* marveiled because they saw no mo.  
 Their Ensenzie cryed on the *Persies* side,  
 With Bishop *Beik*, that boldly could abyde.  
 A foreseмbly was at their meeting seen,  
 As fire from flint it fared them between.  
 The hardy *Scots* right awfully them abade,  
 Brought fel to ground throgh weed that was we.  
 Pierced plats with points stiff of steel, ( mad  
 By force of of hand gart many cruel kneel.  
 The strong stour rose as smoak about them fast,  
 Or mist through Sun, up to the clouds past.  
 To help himself, each one had meikle need :  
 The worthy *Scots* stood in a felon dread,  
 Yet foreward fast they preassed for to be,  
 And they on them, great wonder was to see.  
 The *Persies* men in war were used wel,  
 Right fiercely fought, and ionzet not a deal.

Adam Wallace and Aischinlek came in,  
 part of Sutherland right cruelly they twin,  
 returned to them a noble men of wear,  
 the Scots got rowm, and many down they bear.  
 The new countier assayled them so fast,  
 through Englishmen made slops at the last.  
 Then Wallace self into the felon throng,  
 With his good sword, that heavy was and long,  
 At Persies face with a good will he bare,  
 Both bone and brain the frusched steel throghe share  
 Three hundred men when Lord Persie was dead,  
 Out of the gate the Bishop Beik they lead.  
 For then them thought it was no time to bide,  
 By the Frier Kirk, to a wood there besyde :  
 In the Forrest forlooth they tarryed nought.  
 On fresh horse to Bothwell soon they sought.  
 Wallace followed with worthy men and wights :  
 Forfoughten they were, and travelled all the night  
 Yet fel they flew into that chase that day :  
 The Bishops self, and good men got away :  
 Symar Wallange rescued them in that place,  
 That Knight full oft did great harm to Wallace :  
 Wallace began that night at ten hours in Aire :  
 On day by nine in Glasgow sembled there :  
 By one after noon at Bothwel yet he was,  
 Reproved Wallange ere he would further pass :  
 Then turned again, as witnessess well the book,  
 To Dundaffrede; and their resting he took :  
 Told good sir Iahn of their tydings in Aire,  
 Great moan he made, he was not with them there  
 Wallace sojourned in Dundaffe at his will,  
 Five dayes out, till cydings came him till

Out of the hight where good men were forlorn  
 For Buchane rose, Athol, Monteith and Lorn.  
 Upon Argyle, a felon war they make,  
 For Edwards sake this they can undertake.

The Knight Campbell in Argyle then was still,  
 With his good men, against King Edwards will,  
 And kepted free Lochow his heritage,  
 But Makfadyean did him great outrage.

This Makfadyean to Englishmen had sworn,  
 Edward gave to him both Argyle and Lorn.  
 False John of Lorne to that gift can accord,  
 In England then he was new made a Lord.

Thus falsely he gave over his heritage,  
 And took at London of Edward a great wage.

Duncan of Lorn yet for the Land strave,  
 While Makfadyean over-set him with the law.  
 Put him on force to good Cambell the Knight,  
 Which into war was wise, worthy and wight.

This Makfadyean was entred into Scotland,  
 And marvellously that tyrant took in hand,  
 With his power, the which I speake of aye,  
 These three Lordships assembled to him there,

Fifteen thousand of cursed folk indeed,  
 Of all gathering, the Host he had to lead,  
 And many of them was out of Ireland brought,  
 Bairns nor wives, that people spared nought,

Wasted the Land as far as they might ga :  
 These beastly folk could not but burn and slay :  
 Into Lochow he entred suddenly, (ib.)  
 The good Knight Cambel saw good defence for  
 To Craighmyre with three hundred he yeed,  
 That strength they held for all their cruel feed.

lorn when brake the Bridge that they should over pass,  
But through a foord where narrow passage was,  
Bandonly Campbel against them bade,  
Upon Ause, that was both deep and braid.  
Makfadyean was upon the other side,  
And these on force behoved him to byde :  
Or at the foord he durst not enter out,  
Or good Campbel might set him then in doubt.  
Makfadyean sought, and a small passage fand,  
Did he leasure he might passe off the land,  
Betwixt a Rock and a great water side :  
But four in front, there might none go nor ride.  
into Lochow was bestial great plencie,  
Where that he thought with all his Host to be,  
And other stuff, that they had with them broughte,  
But all his Host availed him right nought.

Duncan of Lorn hath seen this sudden case,  
From good Campbel he went to seek Wallace,  
Some help to get of their torment and teen,  
Together before in Dundee had they been,  
Learning at school, into their tender age :  
He thought to slack Makfadyeans bie courage,  
Gilmichel then, with Duncan forth had dight,  
A guide he was, a foot-man wonder wight.  
Soon got they wit where Wallace lodged was.  
With their complaint to his presence they passe.  
Eur Malcome als the Lennox held at peace,  
With his good men to Wallace can he preasse,  
To him there came good Richard of Lundie,  
Into Dundaff he would no longer ly.  
Sir John the Graham als bowned him to ride,  
Makfadyeans war so grieved him that tide.

## C H A P. I I.

How Wallace slew Makfadyean.

Then Wallace thought his great power to see  
In what array he ruled that Countrey :  
The Ruikby then keeped with great wrong  
Striviling Castle, that stalwart was and strong ;  
When Wallace came by South it in a vale,  
To Earl Malcome he said he would it fail :  
In diverse parts he gart dissever his men,  
Of their power, the Sutheron should not ken.  
Earl Malcome bade in bushment out of sight,  
Wallace with him took good Sir John the knight  
And an hundred of wise war-men about,  
Through Striviling rade, if any would iish out  
Toward the Bridge the gainest way they passe.  
When Ruikby saw where that their power was,  
He took seven score of Archers that was there,  
Upon Wallace they followed wonder fair,  
That feil bicker did them meikle dear.  
Wallace in hand gripped a noble spear,  
Again returned, and hath the foremost slain.  
Sir John the Graham, that mickle was of main,  
Amongst them rade with a good spear in hand,  
The first he slew that he before him fand :  
Upon another his spear in sunder yeed :  
A sword he drew, which helped him in need,  
English Archers upon them can renew,  
That his good horse with arrows soon they slew.  
On foot he was, when Wallace hath it seen :  
He lighted soon with men of arms full keen,  
Amongst the rout fighting full wonder fast,  
Then Englishmen returned at the last.

the Castle they would have been full fain,  
 Earl Malcome with men of meikle main,  
 wxt the Sutheron and the gates yeed,  
 my they flew that doughty were indeed :  
 the great preasse Wallace and Ruikby met,  
 with his good sword a straik upon him set,  
 fly to death the old Ruikby he drave,  
 two sons escaped amongst the lave,  
 the Castle by adventure they yeed,  
 with thirty men, no mo escaped that dread.  
 the Lennox men with their good Lord that was,  
 from the Castle they said they would not passe :  
 or well they wist it might not holden be  
 no long time, for they this ordained he.  
 Earl Malcome took the house to keep that tyde,  
 Wallace would not from his first purpoie by de :  
 stance he made to this good Lord and wise,  
 from them to passe he would in no kind wise,  
 while that he had Striviling, the Castle strong,  
 true men him told, they might not hold it long :  
 then Wallace thought most on Makfadyean,  
 of Scottish-men he had slain many an.  
 Wallace avowed, that he should wroken be  
 On that Rebald, or else therefore to die.  
 Of tyranny King Edward thought him good,  
 now born he was, and als of simple blood.  
 Thus Wallace was sore grieved in his intent,  
 To this journey right earnestly he went.  
 At Striviling bridge assembled to him right,  
 Two thousand men that worthy were and wight,  
 toward Argyle he bowned him to ride,  
 Duncan of Lorn was their true sikker guide,

Of old *Ruikby* the which I spake of aye,  
 Two sons on live in *Striviling* lived there.  
 When those brethren conceived all at right,  
 This house to hold, that they no longer might,  
 For cause why they wanted both men and me,  
 With Earl *Malcome* they made them for to tre  
 Grace of their lives, and they that with them w  
 Give over the house, then could to *England* p  
 On the third day that *Wallace* from them rade,  
 With King *Edward* full many years they bade.  
 In *Bruces* wars again came in *Scotland*,  
*Striviling* to keep, one of them took in hand.  
 Mention of *Bruce* is oft in *Wallace* book,  
 To fend his right full meikle pain he took:  
 Wherefore should I here tarry any ma?  
 To *Wallace* forth now shortly will I ga.  
 Duncan of *Lorn*, *Gilmichil* from him send,  
 A spy to be, for he the Countrey kend,  
 By our party was past by *Straithfillan*,  
 The small foot-folk began to ilk ilk ane,  
 And horse also on force behoved to fail,  
 Then *Wallace* thought that company to weal.  
 Good men, he said, this is not meet for us,  
 In broken array, if we come to them thus,  
 We may take skaith, and harm our foes but smal  
 To them in like we may not semble all.  
 Tarry we long in plain field while they get,  
 Upon them soon so well we may not set.  
 Part we must leave, us following to be:  
 With me shall passe our power into thre.  
 Five hundred fist to himself hath he tane,  
 Of West-land-men, were worthy known ilk ane.

Sir John the Graham as many ordained he,  
and five hundred to Richard of Lundie.

that part was Wallace of Richartown,  
all good deed he was ay ready bown.

five hundred left, and might not with them go,  
tre suppose that they to bide was wonder wo.

Wallace Host began to take the hight  
over a mountain, then passed out of sight :

Glendocher their spy met them again,  
with Lord Campbel, then was our folk right fain:

their meeting great blythnesse might he see,  
three hundred led that cruel were and keen:

comfort them, and bade them have no dread.  
a beastly folk they want weapons and weed,

on will they flee, and we shortly pursue,  
Loch Duan full suddenly they drew.

then Wallace said, A life we shall all ta,  
or here is none will from his fellow ga.

pon the Mosse a scurriour soon found he,  
the spy they send, that Countrey for to see.

Scoure the land Makfadyean had him send,  
at of Craigmore that day he thought to wend.

ilmichil fast followed upon him thare,  
ith a good sword that well and sharply share,

ade quicke of him, that tydings told he nane.  
the out-spy thus was losed from Makfadyean.

hen Wallace Host upon their foot can light,  
heir hors they left thogh they wer never so wight

or moss and craig they might no longer dree,  
hen Wallace said: Who goes best, let see:

ut through the mosse deliveredly they yeed:  
en took the hold, whereof they had most dread.

Endlong

Endlong the shore, ay three in front they past,  
 While all within were sembl'd at the last.  
 Lord Campbell said, We have chosen this hold,  
 I trow to God their wakening shall be cold :  
 Here is no gate to flee yon people can,  
 But rocks high, and waters deep and wan.  
 Eighteen hundred of doughty men indeed,  
 On the great host but more processe they yeed,  
 Fighting on front, and meikle mastery made,  
 The frayed folk busked withouten bade :  
 Rudely to ray they rushed them again,  
 Great part of them were men of meikle main,  
 Good Wallace men so stoutly can them stier,  
 The battel on back, five aiker braid they bear.  
 Into the stour feil tyrants gart they kneel :  
 Wallace in hand had a good sword of steel,  
 Whom ever he hit, brimly down they bare,  
 Rownd him about a large rude and mare.  
 Sir John the Graham indeed was well worthy,  
 Good Campbell als, and Richard of Lundy.  
 Adam Wallace, and Robert Boyd in fear,  
 Amongst their foes where deeds was sold so deir  
 The felon stour was able for to see.  
 Makfadyean then so great debate made he,  
 With Ireland men hardy and courageous :  
 The stalwart striferight hard and perillous,  
 Abundance of blood, from wounds wide & wan  
 Sticked to dead on ground lay many a man.  
 Two hours large into the stour they stand,  
 The fiercest, they enough of fighting fand :  
 That Jap himself well wist not who should win,  
 But Wallace men would not in sunder twin :

help themselves they were of hardy will,  
*Ireland* blood full felonly they spill :  
th feil fighting, made slops through the thrang,  
the false part our wight war-men so dang,  
at they to bide might have no longer might.  
The *Ireland* folk then made them for the flight,  
craigis clam, and some in water flet,  
no thousand there drowned withouten let.  
Then Scots-men bade still into the field,  
At weapons them from, & on their knees kneel'd  
With piteous voice they cryed on *Wallace*,  
Gods sake, to take them in his grace.  
Sieved he was, but rueth of them he had,  
Received them fair with countenance full sad :  
our own blood we should have great pitie,  
Look ye slay none of *Scots* will yeelden be :  
out-land men, let none escape with their life.  
*Makfadyean* fled for all his felon strife,  
To a cave within a clift of stone.  
Under *Cragemore*, with fifty hath he gone ?  
Man of *Lorn* his leave at *Wallace* askt,  
*Makfadyean* with worthy men he past :  
granted him to put them all to dead :  
They left none then, but broght *Wallace* his head,  
On a spear through the field it bare.  
The Lord *Campbel* then hint it by the hair,  
With on *Cragemore* he heght it for to stand,  
On the stone, for honour of *Ireland*.  
The life-like men that were of *Scotland* born,  
That at his faith he gart them all be sworn :  
Bored them that would come to his fies,  
Let none slay that would come to his peis.

After this deed in *Lorn* then could he fare,  
Ruled the Land had been in meikle care :  
In *Ardchatan* a counsel he gart cry,  
Where many men came to his *Senzoury* :  
*All Lorn* he gave to *Duncan* that was wight,  
*And bade him hold in Scotland* with the right,  
And thou shalt brook this land in heritage,  
Thy brothers son in *London* hath great wage :  
Yet will he come, he shall the lands have,  
I would tyne none that verity might save.  
Many true *Scots* to *Wallace* could persue,  
*At Ardchatan* from feil strengths they drew :  
A good Knight came, and with hem men sixtie,  
He had been oft in many jeopardy  
With *Englishmen*, and sonziet not a deal,  
Ay from their faith, he fended him full well :  
Kept him free, though King *Edward* had swo  
Sir *John Ramsay* that righteous was born,  
Of *Ochterhouse*, and other Lands Lord,  
And Sheriff als, as my book will record,  
Of noble blood, and old Ancestry,  
Continued well with worthy Chevalry.  
Into *Strochane* long time he had been,  
At great debate amongst his enemies keen :  
Right wightly wan his living into wear.  
To him and his, *Sutheron* did meikle dear.  
Well he eschewed, and suffered great distresse,  
His son was called, the flower of courtliness,  
As witnesses well into this short treaty,  
After the *Bruce*, who reads that History.  
He ruled well both into war and peace,  
*Alexander Ramsay* to name he heght but lies.

When it was wear, to arms he him cast,  
Under the Crown he was one of the best.  
In time of peace to courtliness he yeed,  
But to gentrice he took no other heed.

That Gentle-men had not with *Ramsay* been,  
Of courtliness they counted not a preen.  
Freedom and truth he had as men would as,  
Once he began, no better Squyer was.

*Oxburgh* hold he wan right manfully,  
When held it long, while traitours treasonably  
Caused his death. I will not tell you how.

Of such things I will go by as now.

I have had blame to say the soothfastness,  
Wherefore I wll but lightly run that race.

But it be thing that plainly slander is,

For such, I trow, they should not deem no ~~wisse~~  
Of *Alexander* as now I speak no more,  
His father came, as I you told before.

*Wallace* of him right full great comfort hes,  
But he well could do harming unto foes.

In war he was right meikle for to prise :

Wsy, and true, both sober, wight, and wise.

Good *Pretat* als to *Ardshatan* sought,  
Of his Lordship as then he brooked nought;

His worthy Clerk came in of hie lineage,

Of *Sinkler* blood not fourty years of age.

Chosen he was by the Popes consent,

Of *Dunkeld* Lord, was made with good intent;

But *Englishmen* that *Scotland* gripped hait,

Of benefice they let them brook but small.

When he saw well therefore he might not mute,  
To save his life, three years he dwelt in *Bute*:

Lived as he might, and kepted ay good part,  
Under James then Lord Stewart.

While good Wallace, which Scotland wan  
Restored this Lord to his living again. (p. viii)

And many mo which long had been overthrown  
Wallace them put righteously to their own.

The small Host the which I speake of aire,  
Into the hight that Wallace leaved there,  
Came to the field where Makfadyean had been  
Took that was left, both weeds & weapons she  
Through Lorn they past, as goodly as they c  
Of their number they had not lost one man.

On the fifth day they wan to Ardchatan,  
Where Wallace bade with good men many an  
He welcom'd them upon a goodly wise,  
And said, They were right meikle for to pris  
All true Scots he honoured into wear,  
Gave that he wan, himself keeped no gear.

CHAP. III. How Wallace wan S. Johnstoun  
When Wallace wold no longer sojourn ther  
From Ardchatan out through that la  
they fare

Toward Dunkeld, with good men of renown,  
His most thought then was of Saint Johnstoun.  
He called Ramsay, that good Knight great of v  
Sadly advised, besought him of counsel:  
Of Saint Johnstoun now have I remembrance,  
There have I been, and losed men by chance;  
But ay for one we gart ten of them die,  
And yet methinks that is no mends for me.  
I would assay from this land ere we gang,  
And let them wit they occupy here wrang.

hen Ramsay said, That town they may not keep,  
 the walls are low, suppose the ditch be deep :  
 we have anew, that shall them cumber so,  
 will up the dike that we may plainly go  
 plain battel, a thousand over at anes,  
 from this power they shal not hold yon waines.  
 Wallace was glad that he such comfort made :  
 forth talking thus, unto Dunkeld they rade.  
 three dayes there they lodged with pleasance,  
 while time they had fore-seen their ordinance.  
 Ramsay gart big great Bastailies of tree,  
 goodwrights, the best of that Countie.

When they were wrought, betaught the men to lead  
 the water down, while they came near that stead,  
 John Ramsay right goodly was their guide,  
 ruled them well at his will for to bide :  
 the great Host then about the Village past,  
 with earth and stone they filled dykes fast ?  
 banks they made on timber long and wight,  
 rowm passage to the walls they dight.  
 till Bastailies right strongly up they rose,  
 with men of arms soon to assaily goes.

John the Graham, and Ramsay that was wight,  
 the turate bridge assieged in all their might.  
 Wallace self at mid-side of the town,  
 good men of arms that was to bargain bown.  
 Sutheron men made great defence that tide,  
 with artailie that felon was to bide :  
 with tablaster ganzie and stones fast,  
 hand-guns right brimly out they cast :  
 ganziet with spears as men of arms keen.  
 noble Scots that worthy ay have been,

At hand-striaks fra they together met,  
Wich Sutheron blood their weapons loon they w  
Yet Englishmen that worthy were in wear,  
Into that stour right boldly can them bear :  
But all for nought availed them that deed,  
The Scots through force upon them in they y  
A thousand men over walls yeed hastily,  
Into the Town rose hideous noise and cry.

Ramsay and Graham the turate gate have win,  
And entred in, where great strife did begin.

A true Squyer, which Ruthwen heght to nsm  
Came to the assault with good Sir John Graha  
Thirty with him, of men that proved well,  
Amongst their foes, with weapons stiff as steel.  
When that the Scots assembled on either side,  
No Sutheron was that might their dints abide.

Two thousand soon were foyled under feet,  
Of Sutheron blood they sticked in the street.  
Sir John Pseware saw well the Town was tint,  
Took him to fight, and would no longer stint:  
In a light Birge, and with him men sixtie,

The water down, sought succour to Dundie.

Wallace bode still while the fourth day at morn  
And left none there that was of England born.  
Riches they got, both gold and other good,  
Plenish the Town again with Scots blood.

Ruthwen he left their Captain for to be,  
In heritage gave him the Office of fee  
Of all Strathern, and Sheriff of the Town,  
Then in the North good Wallace made him bo  
In Aberdene he gart a Counsel cry,  
True Scottish-men should assemble hastily,

to Colper herade, to visit that *Abbey*:  
 The English Abbot was fled from thence away.  
 Bishop Sinkler without longer abode,  
 Set them at *Glams*, syn forsh witbhem he rade :  
 To Brechin they lodged all that night.  
 Yoon on the morn Wallace gart graith at right,  
 Displayed abroad the Banner of *Scotland*,  
 Good erray with noble men at hand.  
 Woul'd plainly cry, that saved should be none  
 Of *Sutheron* blood, where they might be overgone  
 Plain battel throughout the *Merns* they ryde :  
 The Englishmen that durst not them abyde,  
 Fore the Host full fearedly they flee  
*Dunnoter*, a strength within the sea.  
 Further they might win out of the Land,  
 They sembled ther, while they were four thousand.  
 The kirk they ran, & thought girth to have tane,  
 The lave remained upon the rock of stane :  
 The Bishop then began treaty to ma,  
 Their lives to get, Out of the Land to ga :  
 They were red, and durst not well assay :  
 Wallace in fire caus'd set all hastily,  
 Bent up the Kirk, and all that was therein :  
 O'er the rock the lave ran with great din.  
 He hung on craigs right dolefully to die :  
 Some fell, some fluttered in the sea :  
 Sutheron on life was leaved in that hold,  
 They within were burnt to powder cold.  
 When this was done, they fell on knees down,  
 The Bishop asked absolution.  
 Wallace leugh, and said : I forgive you all :  
 Ye war-men that repents for so small ?

They rewed us not within the town of Aire,  
 Our true Barrons when that they hanged there,  
 To Aberdene then safely can they pass,  
 Where Englishmen right busie flitting was.  
 An hundred ships that ruther bear and aire,  
 To curse their goods, in Haven were by ding ther  
 But Wallace Hoast came on them suddenly.  
 There scaped none of all that great Navy :  
 But fel servants in them was leaved none,  
 At an eb sea the Scots is on them gone,  
 Took out the gear, then set the ships on fire,  
 The men on land they burnt both bone and lyre,  
 Yeed none away, but Priests, wives and baites  
 Made they debate, they scaped not but harms,  
 Into Buchan, Wallace made him to ryde,  
 Where Lord Bewmont was ordained to abyde;  
 Earl he was made but of short time before,  
 He brooked it not for all his bousteous shore.  
 When he wist well that Wallace coming was,  
 He left the Land, and could to Slanis passe,  
 And then by ship fled in England again.  
 Wallace rade through the North-land into plaine,  
 At Cromarty fel Englishmen they flew,  
 The worthy Scots unto him could pursue.  
 Returned again, and came to Aberdene,  
 With his blyth Host, upon the Limmas even:  
 Establisht the land, as he thought best to be,  
 Then with his Host he passed to Dundee.

H A P. IV. How Wallace laid a siedge to Dundee, and gave battel to Kirkingham Thesaurer to King Edward; and to the Earl of Warran, at Striviling Bridge.

Art set a siedge about the Castle strang.

I leave him there and further will I gang.

Aymar Wallange hasted him full fast,

to England with his whole houshould past,

othwel he left, was Murrayes heritage,

nd took him then to go to Edwards wage.

his own Land he left for evermair,

ly Wallace deed great tydings told he there,

Englishmen sore mourned in their mood,

at losed here both life, lands, and goods;

ward as then could not in Scotland fare,

Kirkingham that was his Thesaurer,

thim a Lord that Earl was of Warran,

charged them with numbers many an,

ght well beeen in Scotland for to ride,

Striviling still he ordained them to bide,

nde he might come with ordinance of England

plain again he thought to take on hand.

Hoast past forth, and had but little dread,

Earl Patrick received them at Tweed.

ce he had at good Wallace before,

g time by past, and that increased more :

through a case it hapned of his wife,

nbar from him she held into a strife.

ough the supply of Wallace into plain,

he by means got this Castle again :

g time ere then, and yet he could not cesse,

nt Wallace he proved in many a preasse,

With Englishmen supplyed them at his might,  
 Contrair Scotland they wrought full great unright  
 Their Muster then was awful for to see,  
 Of fighting men thousands there were sixtie :  
 To Striviling bridge, past ere they liked to byde  
 To Earl Malcome a sledge they laid that tyde,  
 And thought to keep the command of their King  
 But good Wallace wrought for another thing,  
 Dundee he left, and made a good Chiftain,  
 With two thousand to keep that house of stane,  
 Of North-land men, and dwelleis of Dundee,  
 The lamine night to Saint Johnstoun went he:  
 Upon the morn to Sheriff-mure he rode,  
 And there a while in good array he bode.  
 Sir John the Graham said : We have undertane  
 With lesse power, such thing that well is gane.  
 Then Wallace said, wher such things comes of ne  
 We should thank God that makes us for to spe  
 But near the bridge my purpose is to be,  
 And work for them some subtil jeopardie.  
 Ramsay answered : The bridge we may keep we  
 Of way about, the Sutheron have little feil.  
 Wallace sent Iop the battel for to set,  
 To tuesday next to fight withoutten let :  
 On saturday unto the bridge they rade,  
 Of good plain boords was well and jointly made  
 Gart watchers wait, that none should to them re  
 A wright he took, the subtilest that was,  
 And ordained him to saw the boords in two,  
 By the mid-trest, that none might over it go;  
 On cornel bands nailed it full soon,  
 Then filleid it with clay, as nothing had been don

he other end he ordained for to be,  
 how it should stand upon rollers of tree,  
 When one were out, that the rest down should fall  
 himself under, he ordained therewithall:  
 bound on the trest, in a cradle to sit,  
 to loose the pin, when Wallace let him wit,  
 went with an horn, when it was time to be,  
 all the Host no man should blow but he.  
 The day approached of the great battel  
 the Englishmen for power would not fail:  
 by six they were against one of Wallace.  
 fifty thousand made them to battel place,  
 the remenant bade at the Castle still,  
 both field and houle they thought to keep at will;  
 the worthy Scots upon the other side,  
 the plain field took, on foot made them to byde.  
 few Kirkinghame the vanguard then led he,  
 with twenty thousand of likely men to see.  
 thirty thousand the Earl of VVarran had,  
 but he did then as the wise man him bade:  
 all the first Hoast before him over was send.  
 some Scots-men that well the matter kend,  
 bade Wallace blow, and said, they were ane  
 he hasted not, but sadly could persue,  
 while VVarrans Host thick on the bridge he saw,  
 from Iap the horn he hint, and could it blaw,  
 asperly, and warned good John VPrige:  
 the roller out he strake then with great slignt,  
 the rest yeed down, when that the pins out goes;  
 a hideous cry among the people rose;  
 both horse and man into the water fell,  
 the hardy Scots, that would no longer dwell:

Set on the rest with straiks sad and fair,  
 Of them thereover as then sovered they were.  
**A**t the fore-breast they proved hardily,  
*Wallace and Graham, Boyd, Ramsay and Lundy*  
**A**ll in the four fighting face for face.  
**T**he *Sutherland* back retired in that place,  
**A**t the first straik five aker broad and more.  
*Wallace* on foot a great sharp spear he bore,  
**A**mongst the thickest of the preasse he gies,  
**O**n *Kirkingham* a straik he chosen hes,  
**I**n the birnish that polisht was full bright,  
**T**he prunzeing head the plates peirced right,  
**T**hrough the body sticked him but rescue :  
**D**erly to death that Chiftain was adue.  
**B**oth man and horse at that straik he bare down,  
**T**he *English* Host that were in battel bown,  
**C**omfort they tint when their Chiftain was slain,  
**A**nd many one began to flee in plain :  
**Y**et worthy men bide still into that stead,  
**W**hile ten thousand were brought unto the dead  
**T**hen fled the lave, and might no longer bide.  
**S**uccour they sought in many diverse side:  
**S**ome East, some West, and some fled to the North  
**S**even thousand whole at once fluttered in *Forth*,  
**P**lumped in deep, drowned without mercie,  
**N**one left on life of all that whole meirzie.  
**O**f *Wallace* Host no man was slain of vail,  
**B**ut *Andrew Murray* into that strong battel.  
**T**he South-part then that saw their men was tint,  
**A**s fiercely fled, as fire doth from the fift.  
**T**he place hath left, *Striviling Castle* and Town  
**T**oward *Dumbar* in great halte made them bow.

When *Wallace* Host had won the field by might,  
 Took up the bridge, and loosed good *John Wright*:  
 On the flyers then followed wonder fast,  
 Earl of *Malcome* als out of the Castle past,  
 With *Lennox* men to stuff the chafe good speed,  
 Ay by the way they gart feil *Sutheron* bleed.  
 In the *Torwood* they gart fall many die.

The Earl of *Warrane* then can full fiercely flee,  
 With *Corspatrick* that graithly can him guide,  
 Unchanging horse, out through the Land they ride  
 Straight to *Dumbar*, but few with them they led.  
 Many were slain over sloathfully that fled.

The *Scottis* horse had run full wonder lang;  
 Many gave over, and might no further gang.  
*Wallace* and *Graham* ever together bade,  
 At *Haddingtown* full great slaughter they made  
 Of *Englishmen*, when their horse tyred had.

When *Ramsay* came, good *Wallace* was full glad,  
 With him was *Boyd*, and *Richard of Lundie*,  
 Three hundred whole was of good Chevalrie.  
 And *Adam Wallace* als of *Richartown*,

With Earl *Malcome*, they found at *Haddingtown*.  
 The *Scottishmen* on slughtter tarried was,  
 While to *Dumbar* the two Chiftains could pass:  
 Full spitefull were for their contrary case.

*Wallace* followed, while they got in that place.  
 Of their best men, and *Kirkingham* of renown,  
 Thirty thousand was dead but redemption,  
 Beside *Beltown*: *Wallace* returned again  
 To follow more, then was it but in vain.

In *Haddingtown*, lodging he bade all night,  
 Upon the morn to *Striviling* passed right,

On the Assumption day befell this case.  
 Ay loved be the Lord of his good grace :  
 Convoyer oft he was to good Wallace,  
 And helped him in many sundry place.  
 Wallace in haste soon after this battel,  
 A great oath took of all the Barrons hail,  
 That with good will would come to his presence,  
 He heght them als to byde at their defence :  
 Sir John Menteith was then of Arran Lord,  
 To Wallace came, and made a plain concord :  
 With witnes there with his oath he him band,  
 Lawty to keep to Wallace and Scotland :  
 Who would not with free will to right apply,  
 Wallace by force punisht them rigorously :  
 Part put to death, part put in prison strang,  
 Great word of him through both these Realm  
 Dundie they got soon by a short treaty, (rang  
 But for their lives they fled away by fey.  
 English Captains that houses had in hand,  
 Left Castles free, and stole out of the land.  
 Within ten dayes after this time was gone,  
 English Captains in Scotland then was none,  
 Except Barnwick and Roxburgh Castles wight,  
 Yet Wallace thought to bring them to the right.

**T**HAT time there was a worthy true Barron;  
 To name he heght Christel of Setoun,  
 In Ledburgh wood, for safety he had been,  
 Against Sutheron full well he could conteen.  
 Edward could not from Scots faith him get,  
 Though they a million gave of gold well met.  
 Heabottel fled from Ledburgh Castle wight,

Towards

owards England, there Setoun met him right,  
With fourty men Christel in bargan bade,  
against seven score, and meikle mastry made:  
ew the Captain, and many cruel man,  
all great riches in that journey he wan.

ou should and gold, as they should pass away,  
the which before they kepted many a day.  
burgh he took, and Ruthmen leaved he,  
t Wallace will their Captain for to be.

old Setoun then to Lowthean made repare,  
this story ye may hear of him mair:  
nd into Bruce, who likech for to read,  
e was with him in many cruel deed.

ood Wallace then full sadly can devise,  
to rule the Land, with worthy men and wise.  
Captains he made, and Sheriffs that were good,  
out of his kin, and of other true blood.

is dear Cousin in Edinburgh ordained he,  
the true Crawford, that ay was full worthie,  
eeper at it with noble men at wage.

Manwell then he had good heritage.  
otland was free, that long in bail had been,  
Wallace it wan from our enemies keen :  
reat Governour of Scotland he could reign,  
liting a time to get his righteous King,  
om Englishmen that held him in bandoun,  
ng wrongfully from his own righteous Crown.

The end of the Seventh Book.

## THE EIGHT BOOK.

## CHAP. I.

*How Wallace put Corspatrick out of Scotland.*

**F**ive moneths thus Scotland stood in good re-  
A counsel cry'd, them thought it was the be-  
In Saint Johnstoun, where it shold holden  
Assembled Clerk, Barron, and Burges free :  
But *Corspatrick* would not come at their call,  
Bade in *Dumbar*, and made scorn of them all.  
They spake of him feil Lords of that Parliament.  
Then *Wallace* said : Will ye hereto consent,  
Forgive him free all things that is by past,  
So he will come, and grant he hath trespassit,  
From this time forth keep lawty to our Crown.  
They granted thereto, Clerk, Burges and Barron  
With whole consent their writing to him send,  
Right lowly thus they them to him commend,  
Besought him fair, as one then of the Land,  
To come and take some Governance in hand.  
Lightly he leugh, in scorn as it had been,  
And said, He had such messige seldom seen,  
That *Wallace* now as Governoour should reign:  
Here is great fault of a good Prince or King.  
That King of *Kyle* I cannot understand,  
Of him I held never a fur of land : ( whe-  
That bauchler trows, for Fortune showes  
Therewith to last, it shall not long be well :  
But to you Lords, and ye will understand,  
Dmake you wise, Dought to make no band :)

Als free I am in this Region to reign,  
Lord of mine own, as ever was Prince or King :  
In England als great part of Land I have,  
Min-rent thereof will no man of me crave.

What will ye more ? I warn you, I am free,  
For your summonds, ye get no more of me.  
To Saint Johnstoun this writ he sent again,  
Before the Lords, was manifest in plain.

When Wallace heard the Earl such answer makes,  
A great heat through courage then he takes :  
For he wist well there could be but one King  
Of this Region at once for to reign.

A King of Kyle, for that he called Wallace :  
Lords, he said, this is an uncouth case :

Be he suffered, we are worse then we was.

Thus rose he up, and made him for to pass :

God hath us tholed to do so for the lave,

On life or death, in faith, we shal him have :

Or gar him grant whom he holds for his Lord,

Or else were shame in story to record.

I vow to God, with ease he shall not be

Into this Realm, but one of u. shal die :

Let's then he come, and know his righteous King,

In this Region well both we shal not reign :

His lightly torn he shal repent full sore,

But power fail, or I shall end therfore.

Since in this earth is ordained me no rest,

Now God be judge, the right he knoweth best.

At that counsel he longer tarried nought,

With his two hundred from S. Ichnstoun he sought,

To the counsel made instance ere he yeed,

They should contain, and of him have no dread.

I am but one, and for good cause I ga,  
 Toward Kinghorn the gainest way they ta :  
 Upon the moor over Forth, South they past :  
 On his voyage, he hasted wonder fast.  
*Robert Lawder at Musselburgh met Wallace :*  
 From Englishmen hee keepeid well his place.  
 Cōld none him treat, Knight, Squyer, nor yet Lord  
 With King Edward for to be at concord.  
 On Earl Patrick to pass he was full glad.  
 Some said before, the Basse he would have had.  
 Good men came als with Christel of Setoun,  
 Then Wallace was four hundred of renown.  
 A Squyer Lyle that well the Country knew,  
 With twenty men to Wallace could persue,  
 Beside Lyntown, and to them told he than,  
 That Earl Patrick with many likely man,  
 At Cokburns-path he had his gathering made,  
 And to Dumbar would come withouten bade.  
 Then Lawder said : It were the best, thinks me,  
 Faster to pass in Dumbar ere he be.  
*Wallace answered : We may at leasure ryde,*  
 With yon power he thinks bargane to byde.  
 And of one thing ye shall well understand,  
 An hardier Lord is not within our Land.  
 Might he be made true steadfast to our King;  
 By wit and force he can do meikle thing :  
 But wilfully he likes to tyne himself.  
 Thus rode they forth, and would no longer dwel o  
 By east Dumbar, where men them told in case,  
 How Earl Patrick was warned of Wallace :  
 Near Innerwick chooseda field at wail,  
 With nine hundred of likely men but fail.

our hundred was with *Wallace* in the right,  
and they anone approached in their sight :  
great fault was there of good treaty between,  
to make concord, and that full soon was seen,  
without rehearse of action in that tide,  
in either part together fast they ride,  
and the stour was strong, and wonder chevalrous,  
continued long with deeds perillous.

Many there died of cruel *Scots* blood.

d. If this treaty the matter is not good,  
Therefore I cease to tell the destruction :  
it was and all of one Nation.

ut Earl *Patrick*, the field left at the last,  
ight few with him to *Cokburns-path* there past ;  
grieved sore that his men thus were tint,  
*Wallace* returned, and would no longer tint,  
oward *Dumbar*, where sooth-fast men him told,  
o purveyance was left into that hold,  
or men of fence, all had been with their Lord.  
hen *Wallace* heard the sikker true record,  
umber he took all whole at his bandoun,  
ave it to keep to *Christel of Setoun*,  
ho stuffed it with men and good victual.

pon the morn. *VWallace* that would not fail,  
ith three hundred to *Cokburns-path* he sought;  
al *Patrick* shed, for bide him would he nougat,  
on to the Park *Wallace* a range hath set,  
we to *Bank-l-wood* *Corpatrick* fled but let:  
le, and out of it to *Norham* passed he.

hen *VWallace* saw it might no better be,  
o *Caldstrem* rode, and lodged him on *Tweed*,  
al *Patrick* then in all haste can him speed,

And passed by ere Wallace power rose,  
 Without resting to Ettrick Forest goes.  
 Wallace followed, but he would not assail,  
 A range to make, as then it might not vail :  
 Over few he had, the strength was thick and stro  
 Twelve myles of breadth, and thereto twise as lon  
 Into Cokholme Earl Patrick bode at rest.  
 For more power Wallace past in the west.  
 Earl Patrick then him graithed hastily :  
 In England past to get him there supply :  
 Out through the land right earnestly could pass,  
 To Anthony Beik that Lord of Durham was.  
 Wallace put him out of Glasgow before,  
 And slew Persie, their malice was the more.  
 And Bishop Beik gart soon great power rile,  
 Northumberland upon an awfull wise.  
 They ordained Bruce in Scotland for to pass,  
 To win his own, but evil deceived he was :  
 They gart him crow that Wallace was rebel,  
 And thought to take the Kingrick to himself :  
 For false they were, and ever yet hath been.  
 Lawty and truth was ever in Wallace seen.  
 To fend their right was all he took in hand,  
 And thought to bring Bruce free unto his land.  
 Of this matter as now I tarry nought.  
 With strong power Sutherland together sought,  
 From Oyis water assembled whole in Tweed,  
 The land Holt was thirty thousand indeed :  
 Off Thames mouth sent ships by the sea,  
 To keep Dumbar that none should them suppli  
 Earl Purick past with twenty thousand but let,  
 Before Dumbar a stalward sledge he set.

the Bishop Beik and Robert Bruce bade stil,  
With ten thousand in Norham at their wil.

Wallace by this that fast was labourand,  
Lowthian came with good men five thousand,  
Right wel beseen into their armour bright,  
Thought to rescue the Setoun bold and wight.

Under Yester that first night lodged he,  
Hay came to him with a good Chevalrie ;  
Down Forrest all that time he had been,  
He had the coming of the Sutherons seen.

Right he had of wise men into wear,

They told Wallace of Patricks great effear.

Hay said : Forsooth and ye might him overset,  
Power again right soon he might not get :

My counsel is, that ye give him battel.

He thanked them of comfort and counsel,

And said : Friend Hay, in this cause that I wends,  
So that we win, I reke not for to end :

Right sooth it is that once we must die,

Into the right, who should in terroure be ?

Earl Patrick there a messenger gart pass,

Told Anthony that Wallace coming was.

Of these tydings the Bishop was full glad.

Amends of him full fain he would have had :

But more prolong throgh Lammer-mure they rade,

Near the spot-mure in bushment still he bade,

Where Earl Patrick then ordained for to be.

Wallace of Beik unwarned then was he :

Yet he before was not hasty indeed,

But then he put both him and his in dread.

Upon swift horse scourriours rode between,

The coming then of Earl Patrick hath seen :

The house he left, and to the Mure is gane,  
 A plain field with his Host hach he tane.  
 Good Setoun then ish'd with few meinzie:  
 Part of his men into Dumbar left he,  
 To Wallace rode, was on the righteous side,  
 In good array to Spots mure they ride.  
 The Scots dread the Earl so many was,  
 Twenty thousand against so few to passe.  
 But Iop perceived, he bade Wallace should byde  
 Tyne not your men, but to some strength ye ride  
 And I shall passe to get you power mair:  
 These are over good thus lightly for to wair,  
 Then Wallace laid, In truth I shall not flee,  
 For four of his, ay one while I may be:  
 We are over near such purpose for to take,  
 A dangerous chase they might upon us make:  
 Here is twenty with this power this day,  
 Would him assay suppose I were away:  
 Many they are, for Gods sake be we strong,  
 Yon Sutheron folk in stour will not bide long.

**CHAP. II. How Corgpatrick brought in Scotland Bishop Beik, and Robert the Bruce: and how Wallace gave them battel, and put them out of Scotland.**

**T**He brim battel braithly on either side,  
 Great rierd there rose over al wher that they  
 The sore sembly when they together met, (ride  
 Feil straiks there they sadly on either set:  
 Prunzeing speirs through plats preassed fast,  
 Many off horse down to the ground they cast:  
 Sadles they teim off horse, but masters there,  
 Of the South-side five thousand down they bare.

ood Wallace Host the foremost cumbred so,  
 but the rest was in will away to go :  
 Earl Patrick bode so cruel of intent,  
 His whole Host of him took hardiment :  
 Against Wallace in many stour was he :  
 Wallace knew well that his men would not flee,  
 For no power that living was on live,  
 While they on hail might be one ay for five :  
 That great strife many were handled haire,  
 The feil dints, the cruel hard debate :  
 The feirs striking made many grievous wound,  
 On the earth the blood made to abound.  
 Wallace Host into a compasse bade,  
 Here they turned, ful great slaughter they made  
 Wallace and Graham, with Ramsay full worthy,  
 The bold Setoun, and Richard of Lundy,  
 And Adam als of Richartoun,  
 With Hay and Lyle with good men of renown :  
 And Barclay, Baird, and Lawder that was wight,  
 Englishmen derly to death they dight.  
 Earl Patrick full fiercely fought again,  
 Through his own hand many he put to pain :  
 Men on him throng foreward into thro.  
 He through the Host feil flops to and fro.  
 The Englishmen began plainly to flee,  
 Then Bishop Beik full sudnely they see :  
 And Robert Bruce, contrair his native mens  
 Wallace was wo, fr a time he could him ken :  
 Bruses deeds he was aggrieved mair  
 In all the lave that day that sembled there.  
 A great bushment at once then brake on breed,  
 In thousand whole that doughty were indeed :

The fliers then with Earl *Patrick* relieved,  
They fought again, where many were mischieve  
When *Wallace* saw the bushment broken was,  
Out of the field on horse he thought to pass :  
But he saw well his Host sound in their weed :  
He thought to fray the foremost ere he yeed.  
The new come Host about him sembled there,  
On either side with straiks sad and sair.

The worthy *Scots* so fiercely fought again.  
Of *Anthonies* men full many have they slain :  
But that Tyrant so used was in wear,  
On *VWallace* Host he did full meikle dear :  
And the bold *Bruce*, so cruelly wrought he,  
Through strength of hand fel *Scots* gart he die  
To resist *Bruce*, *VWallace* he preassed fast,  
But *Englishmen* so thick between them past :  
And Earl *Patrick* in all the haste he mought,  
Throughout the stour to *VWallace* soon he longe  
On the pesant a fellow straik him gave,  
Carved the plate, with his sharp grounded glaive  
Through all the stuff, and wounded him some deare  
But *VWallace* thought he should be venged weare  
Followed on him, and a straik etted fast :  
But one *Maitland* reckless between them past :  
Upon the head good *Wallace* hath him cane,  
Through head and brain in sunder strake the bane  
Dead to the ground at that straik he him drove,  
Thus *VWallace* was deslevered from the lave  
Of his goodmen, among them him alone,  
About him sought fel enemies many one.  
Sticked his horse, to ground behoved to light,  
To fend himself, as wisely as he myght,

the worthy Scots that might no longer bide,  
 with heavy hearts out of the field they ride,  
 with them in fear they weened Wallace had been:  
 foot he was amongst his enemies keen :  
 good rowm he made about him into breed,  
 with his good sword that helped him in need :  
 is none so strong that got of him a straik,  
 never again made never the Scots wraik.

Earl Patrick then that had great craft in wear,  
 with spears ordain'd good Wallace down to bear :  
 new they took were whole into the field,  
 him they yeed, thought he should have no beild,  
 either side fast prunzeing at his gear :  
 hewed off heads, and wisely could him wear.

the worthy Scots of this then little wist, (mift :  
 thought to good Graham when they their chifftain  
 t, under, and Lyle, and Hay, that were so wight,  
 bold bold Ramsay, which was a worthy Knight ;  
 Andie and Boyd, and Christel of Setoun,  
 glaw with five hundred that were in bargane bown,  
 e done to rescue, rudely in they rade,  
 well out Wallace a large rowm they made.

The Bishop Beik was braithly born to eird:  
 that rescue there was a fellow rierd.

he got up, fel Sutheron they flew,  
 the best of the preasse Wallace they can rescue,  
 ave, un horsed him upon a courser wight,  
 ward a strength they rade in all their might;  
 ght wisely fled, rescuing many man.

The Earl Patrick to stuff the chase began,  
 the fliers there little harm they wrought,  
 good Wallace folk away together sought.

Those

Those five hundred the which I speake of air,  
 So awfully abandoned them and fair :  
 No follower durst from his fellow ga,  
 The good fliers such turning in they ma :  
 Four thousand whole had tane the strength before  
 Of Wallace Host, his comfort was the more,  
 Of Glastaden that Forrest thought to hold.  
 Earl Patrick turned, though he were never so bold  
 Again to Beik, when scaped was Wallace,  
 Cursing Fortune of his mischanceful case.  
 The field he wan, and seven thousand were lost  
 Dead on that day, for all the Bishops boast,  
 Of Wallace men five hundred slain I guess,  
 But no Chiftain, his mourning was the less.  
 Near even it was, but Beik would not abide,  
 In Lammer-mure they turned in that tide.  
 Their lodging where he thought to avail,  
 For well they trowed the Scots would assaile,  
 Upon the field, where they gave battell last,  
 The Countrey-men to Wallace gathered fast.  
 Of Edinburgh with Crawfurd that was wight,  
 Four hundred came into their armour bright :  
 To Wallace rode, by his lodging was tane.  
 Of Tevedale came good men many ane,  
 Out of Jedburgh with Ruthwen at that tide,  
 Together sought from many diverse side.  
 Sir William then that Lord was of Dowglas,  
 With him four score that night came to Walla  
 Twenty hundred of new men met that night,  
 Upon their foes to venge them at their might,  
 At the first field these good men had not been.  
 Wallace watches their adversaries hath seen,

to what wise they had their lodging made.

Wallace bowned after supper but bade,

Lammer-mure they passed hastily,

on to array yeed his good Chevalry.

Wallace them made in two parts to be,

John the Graham and Setoun ordained he,

Aylmer and Hay, with three thousand to ride,

himself the rest took wisely for to guide.

With him Lundie, both Ramsay and Douglas,

Marklay and Boyd, and good Adam Wallace.

This the day approached wonder near,

And bright Titan in presence can appear :

The Scottish Host soon sembled into sight

If their enemies, they were not ready dight:

Out of array feil of the Sutheron was :

Right awfully Wallace can on them pass.

At this entry the Scots so well them bare,

All of their foes to death were brittined there.

reckless they rose, and many fled away :

Some on the ground were smored where they lay:

Great noise and cry was raised them among :

Good Graham came, that stalwart was and strong.

Wallace men were well together met,

In the South part so awfully they set.

Contrair them the frayed folk might not stand,

Once there fled of Sutheron ten thousand.

He worthy Scots wrought upon such a wise,

Said, that they were worthy for to prise.

At Bishop Beik, that fellow Tyrant strong,

Die in the stour right awfully and long.

Knight Skelton, that cruel was and keen,

Before him stood into his armour sheen,

To fend his Lord, full worthily he wrought :  
*Lundie* him saw, and sadly to him sought :  
 With his good sword an awkward straik him gave,  
 Through peasan stuff his craig in sunder drove :  
 Whereof the rest were stonfisht in that stead.  
 The bold *Skelton* of *Lundies* hand was dead.  
 Then fled they all, and might no longer bide,  
*Patrick* and *Beik* away with *Bruce* they ride:  
 Five thousand held into a slop away,  
 To *Norham* house in all the haste they may.  
 Our men followed that were worthy and wight  
 Many fliers to death they derfly dight.  
 These three Lords to the Castle they sought,  
 Ful feil they losed that were from *England* broghe K  
 At this journey twenty thousand they tint,  
 Drowned and slain with spears and swords dint.  
 The *Scots* at *Tweed* they hasted them so fast,  
 Feil *Sutheron* men to wrong foords they past.  
*Wallace* returned, in *Norham* when they were,  
 For worthy *Bruce* his heart was wonder fair.  
 He had rather have had him at his large,  
 Free of our Crown, then of fine gold to charge  
 More then in *Troy* was when the Greeks it wan.  
*Wallace* passed with many awfull man,  
 Overt *Patricks* land, and wasted wonder fast :  
 Took out great goods, and places down can cast.  
 His steads twelve, that *Methamis* were call'd,  
*Wallace* gart break those buitly buildings bald :  
 Both in the *Mers*, and also *Lowthian*,  
 Except *Dumbar*, standing he leaved nane.  
 To *Edinburgh* then upon the eighth day,  
 Upon the morn *Wallace* without delay

: to Perth past where a counsel was set,  
 : o the Barrons he shewed withouten let;  
 ave, now his great vow right well eschewed was :  
 : o a Master he gart Eas: Patrick passe,  
 d. because he laid of Scotland he held nought:  
 . to King Edward to get supply he sought :  
 , the Lords were blyth, & welcomed well Wallace,  
 le: thanking great God of his fair happy case.  
 Wallace took state to govern all Scotland,  
 the barnage whole made him an open band :  
 wight men dealt the Land to good men him about.  
 or Scotlands right had set their lives in doubt,  
 maitown he gave to Lawder in his wage,  
 rogh the Knight Wallange ought it in heritage.  
 hen Birgem-crook he gave Lyle that was wight,  
 int) to Scrymger als full good reward he dight :  
 st, hen VVallace-town, and other lands theretill,  
 worthy men he dealt with noble will.  
 ere, his own kin no heritage gave he,  
 t offices, that every man might see :  
 or covetice there could no man him blame,  
 ge he bade reward, while the king should come hame;  
 an, all he did, he thought to bide the Law,  
 fore his King and Master when he saw.  
 : uiland was blyth, in dolor had been lang,  
 skt. every part to good labour they gang.

CHAP. III. How Wallace past into England,  
 and remained there three quarters of a year,  
 and came home again without battel.

BY this the time of October was past,  
 November near approached wonder fast :

Tydinges

Tydings there came King Edward grieved was,  
 With his power in Scotland thought to pass :  
 For Earl Patrick had given such counsel.  
*Wallace* got wit, and sembled power hail,  
 Fourty thousand in *Roslin*-mure they met:  
 Lords, he said, this is King Edwards set,  
 In contrair right to seek us in our Land :  
 I heght to God, and to you, by mine hand,  
 I shall him meet for all his great barnage,  
 Within *England*, to fend our heritage.  
 His false desire shall on himself be seen.  
 He shall us find in contrair of his een.

Since he with wrong hath ridden this Region,  
 We shall now pass in contrair of his Crown.  
 I will not bid great Lords with us to fare,  
 For mine intent plainly I will declare :  
 Our purpose is either to win or die :  
 Who yeelds to him, shall never ransomed be.  
 The Barons then him answered worthily,  
 And said : They would pass with their Cheval  
 Himself and *Iop* provided that menzie,  
 Twenty thousand of wailed men took he :  
 Harness and horse he gart among them wail,  
 Weapons anew that might them best avail :  
 Graithed these men, that cruel were and keen,  
 Better in war in world could not be seen :  
 He bade the rest in labour for to byde.  
 In good array from *Roslin*-mure they ryde :  
 In their muster, good *Wallace* could them ask;  
 What needeth more in one power to pass ?  
 All of one will, as I trow, set are we,  
 In plain battel cannot discomfist be :

our Realm is poor, wasted with Sutheron bloods  
to and win on them gold and other good.

the Host inclined all with humble will,  
and said: They should his bidding then fulfil.

Malcome with his Lennox men is gone,  
at name of rule in him he would have none:

Wallace him knew a Lord that was worthy,  
his counsel he wrought full stedfastly:

longer he was if he had battel seen,  
he before had in good journeys been.

man of strength that hath good wit withall,  
whole Region may comfort at his call.

manly Hector wrought into his wear,  
against an hundred counted was his spear:

that was not through his strength only,  
but rule be led of noble Chevalry.

these examples were worthy for to ken.

For I leave, and speak forth of our men.

Knight Campbell made him to that voyage;  
val Lockow chief, that was his heritage:

good Ramsay forth to that journey went;  
John the Graham forward in his intent.

Wallace cousin, Adam, full worthy was,  
Robert Boyd, forth blythly can they pass.

Auchinleck, and Richard of Lundie,  
and Hay, and Setoun full worthy.

His Royal Host but resting forth they rode,  
To Broxes field, and there a while they bode:

Wallace took with him fourty but lies,

Exburgh gate rode soon ere they would cease

Iron marveiled if it should be Wallace.

Without assurance came to persue that place,  
 Of sic *Ralph Gray* soon preſence could he ask,  
 And warned him thus, further ere he would paſe  
 Our purpose is in *Eng'land* for to ryde,  
 No time we have of ſiedging for to byde :  
 Take heed and hear of our coming again,  
 Give over this house, ſend me the keyes in plain,  
 This I command, before this wiitness large,  
 If thou wilt not, remain with all the charge :  
 But this be done, of force and I take thee,  
 Over the wall thou ſhalt be hanged hie.  
 With that he turned, and all his Host can wend  
 This like command to *Barwick* ſoon he ſend,  
 With good *Ramsay* that was a worthy Knight,  
 The Host but more right awfully he dight.  
 Began at *Tweed*, and ſpared nought they fand,  
 But burnt by force all whole *Northumberland*,  
 All *Durham* town they burnt up in a gleid,  
 Abbeys they ſpared and Kirks where they yet  
 To *York* they rode, but bode ere they would blare  
 To burn and ſlay of them, he thought no ſin :  
 No ſin they thought the ſame to let us ſeele.  
 But *William Wallace* quite our quarrel well :  
 Forts they wan, and ſmal Castles cast down,  
 With asper weapons payed their ransom.  
 Of prisoners they liked not to keep : ( we  
 Whom they overtook, they made their friend  
 No *Sutheron* ſaved for all their great riches,  
 All ſuch treachery he called wretchedneſſe.  
 Unto the gates and suburbs of the town,  
 Braithly they burnt, & brake their buildings do  
 At the walls assayled fifteen dayes,

While King Edward sent to them in this wise,  
 Knight, a Clerk, and a Squyer of peace.  
 And prayed them from burning for to ceas,  
 And heght battel ere fif:een dayes should pass,  
 Soverance so long if he liked to ask.

And als he spiered : Why Wallace took on hand  
 The fellow strife in defence of Scotland ?

And said : He marveiled in his wits for thy,  
 Against England was of so great party.  
 Once ye have made so meikle of Scotland free,  
 Were good time for to let malice be.

Wallace hath heard the message say their will,  
 With manly voice right thus he said them till :  
 I may know well that right enough we have,  
 His soverance I covet not to crave :

Because I am a native Scots man,  
 And my debt to do all that I can,  
 Send this Kingrick out of dangering,  
 Yet his desire we will grant him something.

The Host shal ceas for ought that may betyde,  
 These fourty dayes bargin to abyde,  
 And shal do nought, lest then it move in you,  
 This respite my self could never trow.

King Edwards writ under his seal they gave,  
 Fourty dayes that they should battel have.

Wallace then gave credence to their King,  
 Before they took, then passed but resting,  
 Told him whole how Wallace let him feel,  
 Their soverance he cared not a deal.

That ruled men so awful in effeir,  
 Kings do not Christen, as he leads into wear.

King answered, and said : It should be kend,

It comes of wit, enemies to commend :  
 They are to dread right greatly in certain,  
 Sadly they think of harms that they have tane.  
 Leave I them thus at Counsel with their King,  
 And of the Scots again to speak some thing.

**W**allace tranoyned upon the second day,  
 From York they pals upon a good array  
 North-west they went, in battel busked bown,  
 Their lodging they took beside Northallartown,  
 And cryed his peace their Markets for to stand,  
 Those fourty dayes for people of England.  
 Who that liked any victual to sell,  
 Of all their store was meikle for to tell.

Sir Ralph Rymount Captain of Miltown was,  
 With great power by night ordained to p̄ss,  
 On Wallace Host to make some jeopardie.  
 Feil Scots-men that dwelt in that Countrie,  
 Wist of this thing, and gathered to Wallace :  
 They made him wise of all this fellow case.  
 Good Lundie then to him he called there,  
 And Few the Hay of Lochartquhart was air,  
 With three thousand that worthily was wrouḡ  
 Then privatly on from the Host they sought ;  
 The men he took that came to him of new,  
 Guides to be, for they the Countrey knew :  
 The Host they made in good quiet to be,  
 A space from them he busked privatlie :  
 Sir Ralph Rymount with seven thousand came i  
 Of Wallace Host a jeopardie did begin :  
 The Bushment brake ere they the Host came n  
 The Sutheron men the worthy Scots can stear,

Three thousand whole were braithly brought to  
ourrie they soght, & sikerly have found. (ground  
Sir Ralph Rymount was sticked on a spear,

Three thousand slain that worthy were in wear.

No Sutheron wist when their Chiftain was slain,  
To Miltown fast they fled in all their main :

Wallace followed fast with his Chevalry,

Amongst Sutheron they entred suddenly,

Scots and English into the town at once,

Sutheron men shot, and braithly cast down stones:

Of their own men right feil then have they slain,

The Scots about that were of meikle main,

Up greifles ran, and seized all the Town,

Deify to dead the Sutheron dang they down.

Wallace there hath founden great riches,

ewels and gold, weapons and harness:

poiled the Town of wine and of vittail,

So his Host sent with carriage of great vail,

three dayes still within the Town he bade,

Then broke down work that worthily was made:

Wives and hairns they put out of the Town,

No man he saved that was of that nation.

When Scots had tane and tursid their desire,

Valls they broke, and set the rest on fire:

The timber work they burnt up all in plain,

On the fourth day to the Host rode again.

Part cast a dyke that might some strengthning be,

To keep the Host from sudden jeopardie.

Ben Englishmen vvas right graithly agast,

From North and South, unto the King they past:

Pumfres lay, and held a Parliament:

To give battel the Lords vwould not consent,

But *VVallace* were of *Scotland* crowned King.  
 Their Counsel fand it was a perillous thing,  
 For though they wan, they wan but as they were  
 And if they tair, lost *England* evermair,  
 In case it were put in the *Scots* hand :  
 And this decret their wit amongst them fand,  
 If *Wallace* would upon him take the Crown,  
 To give battel they should be ready bown.  
 The famine Message to him they sent again,  
 And their intent they told to him in plain.  
*Wallace* them charged from his presence absent,  
 His Counsell called, and showed them his intent  
 He and his men desired battel to have,  
 By any wayes of *England* over the lave :  
 Himself laid first : that were an over hie thing,  
 Against my faith, to reave my righteous King.  
 I am his own born native of *Scotland*.  
 To wear the Crown I will not take in hand,  
 To fend my Realm it is my debt by skil,  
 Let God above reward me as he wil.  
 Some bade *Wallace* upon him take the Crown :  
 Wise men laid : Nay, it were detision,  
 To Crown him King but voice of Parliament,  
 For they wist not if *Scotland* would consent.  
 Other some said : It was the wrongous place.  
 Thus deemed they of many diverse case,  
 The Knight *Campbell* of wit a worthy man,  
 As I said aire, with them was present than,  
 Heard, and answered, when many said their will  
 This were the best, and *Wallace* grant theretill,  
 To crown him King solemnly for a day,  
 To get an end of all our long delay,

The good Earl Malcome said: That Wallace might  
As for one day, in fence of Scotlands right,  
Though he refused it lastingly to bear,  
Receive the Crown as into fare of wear!

The people all to him gave their consent:  
Malcome of old was Lord of Parliament.

Yet Wallace choled, and let them say their wil,  
When they had deemed by many diverse skil.  
In his own minde he abhorred this thing.

The commons cryed Make Wallace crowned King  
Then sembled he, and said : It should not be,  
At termes short, ye get no more of me.

Under colour our answer we must make,  
But such a thing I wil not on me take:  
Wil you suffer to say that it was swa,

It were a scorn the Crown on me to ta:

They would not let the message of England  
Come them amogst, or they should understand.  
Two Knights past to the message again,

Made them to trow Wallace was crowned in plain  
Gart them trust wel that it was soothfast thing:  
Delivered thus, they passed to their King:

To Pumfert went, and told that they had seen,  
Wallace crowned, whereof they Lords were teen,  
In barret w<sup>c</sup>x in Parliament where they stood,

Then said they all : These tydings are not good:  
He did so well in all his time before,  
And now their King, he will do meikle more.

A fortunate man, nothing goes him again,  
And we give battel, we shal repent with pain?  
Another said; And battel will he have,

Or stroy our Land, no treason may us saye;

In his conquest, since first he couth begin,  
 He selleth not, but takes that he may win :  
 For Englishmen he sets no doom but dead :  
 Pryce or pennies may make us no remead.  
 And *Woodstock* sayes ; Ye work not as the wise  
 If that ye take the anture of surprise :  
 For though we win all that are in *England*,  
 The rest are strong aginst us for to stand.  
 Be *Wallace* safe, other they count but smal,  
 For that, me think, it were the best of all,  
 To keep our strengths, Castles, and walled tow  
 So we shall fend the folk of this Region :  
 Though North be burnt, better of soverance to b  
 Then set all *England* in a jeopardie.  
 They granted all as *Woodstock* can them say,  
 And thus they put the battel in delay,  
 And cast them whole for other governance,  
 Aginst *Wallace* to work some ordinance.  
 Thus *Wallace* hath in plain discomfitt hail,  
 Aginst King *Edward* all his whole battel :  
 For through falsehood and his subtility,  
 They thought he should for great necessity,  
 And fault of food, to steal out of the land.  
 Then this deceit their wit amongst them fand,  
 They gare the King cry all their Markets down,  
 From *Trent* to *Tweed*, in through fair & free tow  
 That in the bounds no man should victual lead,  
 Such stuff and wine, under the pain of dead.  
 The same decreit they gave in Parliament.  
 Of Scots forth to speak is mine intent.  
*Wallace* lay still while fourty days were gone,  
 Abyding them, but appearance saw none,

Battel

cel to have, as their promise was made :  
 Regart again display his Banner brade :  
 Approved Edward right greatly of this thing,  
 Touchled his seal, blew out on this false King,  
 Re-crying turned back, and yeed his gate.  
 Sirn Wallace made full many biggings hate.  
 They raised fire, burnt up Northallartown,  
 Run through York-shire boldly made them down  
 Destroyed the Land as far as ever they ride,  
 Even miles about they burnt on every side.  
 And wrought the Sutheron many working wound  
 Places spilt, great towers can confound.  
 Widows weeped with sorrow in their song,  
 Widens mourned with great meaning among,  
 They spared none, but women and the Kirk :  
 Neworthy Scots of labour would not irk.  
 Came to Abbeys right largely of their good.  
 All Kirk-men they did nothing but good.  
 The temporal land they spoiled at their will,  
 Good gardens gay, and great orchards they spill,  
 To York they went these war-men of renown,  
 A fledge set they right sadly to the Town.  
 A great defence they garnisht them within,  
 Fell assault without they can begin.

C H A P. IV. *The Siedge of York.*

Divid the Host in four parts about,  
 With watches fell, that no man should iſh out,  
 About the town, upon the south-port side,  
 Here Wallace and good Lendie did abide,  
 And Malcome then at the west-gate abade,  
 Iſh him the Boyd that good journeys had made.

The Knight Campbell of Lochow that was Lord  
 At the north-gate, and Ramsay made them for the  
 Sir John the Graham, that worthy was in wear,  
 Auchinleck, Crawford, with full manly effeare,  
 At the East-port boldly they think to bide.  
 A thousand Archers upon the Scots side,  
 Dissevered them amongst the four party.  
 Five thousand bow-men in the town for thy,  
 Within the wals arrayed them full right,  
 Twelve thousand mo, that seemly was to fight.  
 Then Wallace said: And yond were on a plain,  
 In field to fight, me thinks we should be fain.  
 Then salziet they right fast on every side,  
 The worthy Scots that boldly durst abide,  
 With speir and shield, for guns they had none,  
 Within the dykes they gart feil Sutheron groane,  
 Arrows they shot right fierce as any fire,  
 Out over the wals, that flamed in great yre:  
 Through birnish bright, with heeds of fine steel,  
 The Sutheron blood of freindship none they see,  
 Over shining harness sought the blood so shee,  
 The Englishmen that cruel were and keen,  
 Kept their town, and fended them full fast,  
 Faggats of fire amongst the Host they cast,  
 With pick and tar of feil showes they sent:  
 Many were hurt ere they from the wals went.  
 Stones of spring-holds they did cast out fast,  
 And gads of yron, made many groom agist:  
 But nevertheless the Scots that were without,  
 The town full oft they set into great doable,  
 Their bulwark burnt right brimly of the town,  
 Their barmkin wan, and great garrets cast down.

Thus layled they on each side with great might,  
Long the day was gone, and coming was the night.  
The weary Host then drew them from the town,  
Set out watches, for resting made them bown.  
wash wounds with wine, of the that were unsound  
For none was dead, of great mirth they abound.  
Few men were hurt, but no mourning they made,  
Confirmed the siedge, and stedfastly abade.

When that the Sun on morrow rose up bright,  
Before the Chiftains assembled they full right,  
And said, Amends of the town they should take,  
For all the fence that the Sutheron might make.

Arrayed again, as they began before,  
About the Town they assayled wonder sore,  
With felon shot out over the walls full sheen:  
Few Englishmen that cruel were and keen,  
With shot were slain, for all their targets strange  
Bursted helms, many to ground they dang.  
Brime burning fire they cast at every gate,  
The entries thus in peril ofte they set.  
The defenders were of full great defence,  
Kept the town through strength and violence.  
All thus the day they drove unto the night,  
To pavilions bowned many weary wight:  
All irk of war, the town was strong to win,  
Of attailzie, and noble men within.

When that they rowed the Scots were ar rest,  
For jeopardie the Englishmen them cast.  
Sir John Morton was known worthy and wight,  
Sir William Less then graithed them that night,  
With five thousand well garnisht and savage,  
Upon the Scots they thought to make skirmage,  
And

And at the gate ished out hastily,  
 On Earl *Malcome*, and his good Chevalry.  
 To check the watch, *Wallace* and ten hath been  
 Ryding about, and hath their coming seen:  
 He gart one blow was in his company,  
 The ready men arrayed them hastily:  
 Feil of the Scots ilk night in harness bade,  
 By ordinance, for they such rule had made:  
 With short advice together then they went  
 Upon their foes, where feil *Sutheron* were shen.  
*Wallace* knew well the Earl too hasty was,  
 Eor that he sped him in the preas to pass.  
 A sword of war into his hand he bare,  
 The fist he hit, the craig in sunder share.  
 Another acward upon the face took he,  
 Both nose and front on the field gart he flee.  
 The hardy Earl before his men out past  
 Into the field, where feil were fighting fast.  
 A shearing sword he bare drawn in his hand,  
 The fist was fey that he before him fand.  
 When *Wallace* was and he together set,  
 There lasted none against them that they met;  
 But either dead or fled away them fra:  
 By this the Host was in a good array:  
 With the great scry assembled them about,  
 Then stood the *Sutheron* in a fellow doubt.  
*Wallace* knew well the Englishmen would flee,  
 For thy he thrusted in the thickest to be,  
 Hewing full fast on whomsoever he fought,  
 Against his dint fine steel availed nought.  
*Wallace* of hand, since *Arbun*, had no maik,  
 Whom he hit right, was by dead at one straik.

that was well know in many places where,  
 whom *Wallace* hit, they deired *Scots* no mair :  
 As all his men did cruelly and well,  
 That came to *Straiks*, that might the *Sutheron* feel.  
 The *Englishmen* fled, and left the field plainly,  
 he worthy *Scots* wrought there so hardily,  
 Sir *John Morton* in that place he was dead,  
 And twelve hundred, but any more remead.  
 Thus many were left into the field and slain,  
 he rest returned into the town again :  
 Andrewed full sore that ever they forth could found  
 Amongst them was full many working wound,  
 The Host again each one to their ward rade,  
 Commanded watch, and no more noise made,  
 But rested still, while that the bright day dew,  
 Gain began the town to sailzie new.

With this day wrought with full great worthiness,  
 Mailed sore by wit and hardiness.

The Hosts victual waxed scant, and failed fast,  
 But lay they there while diverse dayes were past :  
 The land wasted, and meat none was to win,  
 At that wist not the folk that was therein :  
 They dread full sore for their own Vennison.  
 For loverance prayed the power of the town,  
 To speak with *Wallace* then they desired fast,  
 And he appeared, and spreated; what they askt :  
 The Major answered : We would pay you ransoun,  
 And pass away and dear no more the town.

Great shame it were that we should yeilden be,  
 And towns holden of lesse power then we :  
 May not win us, long though that ye bide,  
 I shall give gold, and ye will from us ride.

We

We may give battel, durst we for our King,  
Since he hath left it, were over high a ching  
To us to do, without his ordinance,  
This town of him we hold in governancé.

*Wallace* answered, Of your gold reck we noug  
It is for battel that we hither sought :  
We had rather have battel of *England*,  
Then all the gold that good King *Arthur* fand  
On Mount *Michel* when he the Gyant slew.  
Gold may be gone, but worship ay is new :  
The King promis'd that we should battel have,  
His write thereto under his seal they gave.

Letter nor band ye see may not avail  
Us for this time, to get of him battail :  
Me think we should on his men woken be ;  
Upon our kin many great wrongs wrought he.  
His devil-like deed he wrought into *Scotland*,  
The Major said, Sir, right ye thus understand :  
We have no charge what our King gars us do,  
But in this kind we shall be bound you to :  
Some part of Gold to give you with good will,  
And noug after to wait you with none ill,  
By no kin mean the power of this town,  
But if our King make him to battel bown.  
Into the Host was many worthy man,  
With *Wallace* mo, nor now reckon I can.  
Better it was, for at his will they wrought,  
Though he was best, yet other lake we noug  
All served thanks to *Scotland* evermair,  
For manlike wit the which they shewed there. The g  
The whole Chunsel thus deemed there among, But fo  
The town to sledge they thought it was goo strofur led

And not a way to win it by no slight :  
 The Counsel found it was the best they might,  
 Some gold to take, since that we get no mair,  
 Then forth away into their voyage fare.

Then Wallace said, My self will not consent,  
 But if this town make us this plain consent,  
 Take our Banner, and set it on the wall,  
 For our power this Realm hath ridden all,  
 Yeelden to be, when we think them to take,  
 England long residence if we make.

This answer soon they sent to the Major,  
 And they consented, the remnant that was there ;  
 The Banner took, and set it on the town,  
 So Scotland was heght honour and renown,  
 The Banner there from eight hours unto noon.  
 Their finance made, delivered gold full soon,  
 Five thousand pounds of good gold of England,  
 The Host received with viciual aboundand,  
 Both bread and wine, right gladly forth they gave,  
 And other stuff, that they liked to have.

Twenty dayes out the Host remained there,  
 But want of viciual gart them from it to fare,  
 Yet still at peace the Host lodged that night,  
 While on the morn the Sun was risen bright,  
 Into April among the shawes sheen,  
 When that the ground was clad with tender green  
 Pleasant it was to any creature,  
 In lusty love this time for to indure.

The good women had freedom largely,  
 But food was scant, they could get none to buy ;  
 Troubled up tents, and to the Countrey rade,  
 An Englishmen full great heirship they made.

Burnt & brake down, buildings they spared nough  
 Right worthy *Wallace* low to ground they brogh  
 All *Mydlane*-land they burnt up in a fire,  
 Brake Parks down, destroyed all the Shire.  
 Wilde Deer they slew, for other beasts were na  
 These war-men took of Vennison good wane.  
 Toward the South they turned at the last,  
 Made buildings bare, as far as ever they past.  
 The Commons all to *London* then they went,  
 Before the King, and told him their intent,  
 And said, they would, but he gart *Wallace* cease,  
 Forsake their faith and take them to his peace.  
 No Herauld there then durst to *Wallace* pasle,  
 Whereof the King greatly aggrieved was.  
 Thus *Edward* left his people into bail,  
 Contrair *Wallace* he would not give battel,  
 Nor byde in field, for ought that they could say  
 Gave over the cause, to *London* past his way.  
 At men of wit this question here I ask,  
 Amongst Nobles, if ever any was  
 So long in *England*, through force or through cas  
 Since *Brutus* death, but battel, but *Wallace*?  
 Great *Julius* the Empire had in hand,  
 Yet twice on force was put out of *England*.  
 With *Arthur* als, first of war when he prieved,  
 Twice did they fight, suppose they were mischier  
 Awfull *Edward* durst not for *Wallace* bide (ed  
 In a plain battel, for all *England* so wide,  
 In *London* lay, and took him to his rest,  
 And brake his vow: which hold you for the best  
 Deem as ye list, good men of discretion,  
 Right clear it is to resolve this question,

my sentence now briefly will I passe :  
 When Wallace thus throgh York-shire journeying  
 Actual as then was none left in the land, (was,  
 it in houses, where it might be warrand :

The Host hereof abased was to bide,  
 Food scanted, no pleasure was that tide.  
 Some bade turn home, & some would further mair  
 Wallace called Jop, and said to him right fait :  
 You knowest the land where most abundance is,  
 Thou our guide, and then we shall not misse  
 Actual to find, that wot I wonder well,  
 You hast I trust in England meikle feil.  
 The King and his strong strengths are gone,  
 At jeopardie, now peril have we none.

Then Jop said, Sir, be ye guided by me,  
 The plentiest part of England ye shall see :  
 Wine and wheat there is in Richmont-shire,  
 And other stuff for food, as ye desire.

Whereof I trow ye shall be well content,  
 The Host was glad, and thitherward they went,  
 Any true Scots was semblid in that Land,  
 Wallace came well mo than nine thousand,  
 Of presoun part, some had in labour wrought,  
 From either part full fast to him they sought.

Wallace was blyth of our own native kin,  
 That came to him of bail that they were in.  
 And all the Host, of comfort was blyther,  
 Their own folk was multiplying there :

Richmont-shire they found abundance  
 Of bread and ale, with other purveyance :  
 They Parks down, and slew beasts many one,  
 Of wilde and tame, forsooth they spared none.

The roughout

Throughout the land they past in good array,  
A seemly place so found they in their way,  
Which *Ramswatch* heght, as *Jop* himself then to  
*Fehew* was Lord and Captain in that hold.  
Five hundred men were sembled in that place,  
To save themselves and their goods from *Walla*,  
A royal stead was by the Forrest side,  
With turrets fair, and garrats of great pride,  
Builded about, right likely to be wight,  
With five great towers well builded to the hig,  
Feil men about on walls busked been,  
In good armour that birnisht was full sheen.  
The Host past by, and visited but that place,  
Yet they within on loud defid *VWallace*.  
And trumpets blew with many warlike sound,  
Then *VWallace* said, Had we yon gallants down  
On the plain ground, they would more sober,  
Then *Jop* said, Sir, ye gart his brother die,  
In Heralds weed, ye wot, on *Tinto-hill*.  
*Wallace* answered, So would I with good will,  
Had I himself: but we may not him dear:  
Good men may thole of harlots scorn in wear.  
Sir *John the Graham* would at the bicker been,  
But *Wallace* loon the peril hath foreseen,  
Commanded him to let his fiercenesse be,  
We have no men to waste in such degree.  
Would we them harm, I have another gate,  
How we with fire within shall make them heat  
For fire hath ay been fellon into wear,  
On such a place it may do meikle dear:  
Their bulwark old I see of withered oak,  
Were it on fire, it would not bide a stroak:

houses and woods here is enough plentie,  
 no hews best of this Forrest let see.  
 All houses down, we shall not wein a deal,  
 the old timber will gar the green burn well.  
 his command right busily they wrought,  
 great wood in haste about the place they brought,  
 the bulwark wan these men of arms bright,  
 the barmkin laid timber upon hight :  
 ten bow-men shot, to keep them from that cast,  
 at they about had fastned fire full fast :  
 omen and bairns on *Wallace* loud can cry,  
 knees they fell, and asked him mercy.  
 one quarter where fire had not yet tane,  
 they took them out of that Castle of stane,  
 ne bet the fire with brands brim aud bold :  
 the red flame rose full high about that hold.  
 barrels of pick for fence were hanged there,  
 all strake in fire, their mischief was the mair.  
 When the brim fire out over the Place was past.  
 when they within might neither shoot nor cast :  
 so bestial of neat and horse within,  
 mongst the fire they made an hideous din.  
 the armed men in harness were so heat.  
 some down to ground dushed but more debate.  
 some lay, some fell into the fellow fire,  
 mored to dead, and burnt up bone and lyre.  
 the fire brake in at all opens about,  
 one bade aloft, so fellon was the doubt :  
 shew himself lap rudely from the hight,  
 through all the fire, can on the barmkin light :  
 with a good sword *Wallace* strake off his head,  
 up hing it up, and thrust it from that stead.

Five hundred men that were into that place,  
Got none away, but dead withoutten grace.  
*VV*allace bade still with his power that night:  
Upon the morn, the fire had failed might,  
Before the gate where it had burnt on breed,  
**A** path they made, and to the Castle yeed,  
Strake down the gate, and took what they mig  
Jewels and gold, great riches was therein. / w  
Spoiled that place, and left nought else there,  
But bealis, burnt bodies, and als wals bare.  
Then took they her that wife was to *Fehew*,  
**G**ave her command, as she was woman true,  
To turse that head to *London* to King *Edward*.  
She it received with great sorrow in heart.  
*W*allace himself these charges to her gave,  
Say to yon King, but if I battel have,  
At *London* gates we shal assaily fair,  
In this moneth we think for to be there.  
Trust in the truth, will God we shal not fail,  
Unless I cease through charge of our Counsel.  
The South-west part of *England* we shal see,  
But he seek peace, or else bargane with me:  
Upon a time he charged me on this wise,  
Right bousteadously to make to him service,  
Such shal he have, as he us cause hath made,  
Then moved they withoutten more abade,  
Delivered she was from this Chevalrie,  
Toward *London* she dight her earnestlie:  
Unto the Town but more process she went,  
Where *Edward* lay, sore moved in his intent:  
His Nevoys head, when he saw it was brought,  
So great sorrow sadly upon him sought.

With great unease upon his feet he stood,  
keeping in wo for his dear tender blood.

The Counsel rose, and prayed him to cease,  
To lose *England*, but if we purchase peace :  
Then *Woodstock* said : This is my best counsel,  
To make peacee in time, as for your own avail,  
(where ye tine more, we flake of our courage,  
Where ye may get help of our barnage.

The King granted, and bade them message send,  
No man was there that durst to *Wallace* wend.

The Queen appeared, and saw the great distance :  
Well born she was of the right blood of *France*,  
She trowed well therefore to speed the mair,  
Her self purposed in that message to fare.

As she forethought that the King took on hand,  
Against the right so oft to reave *Scotland*.

And feit men said, the vengeance hapned fair,  
Of great murther his men made into *Aire*.

Thus deemed they in Counsel them amang,  
To this effect the Queen bowned to gang.

When she hath seen each man forsake this thing,  
In knees she fell, and asked at the King :

Sovereign, she said, if it your wills be,  
That I desire yon Chiftain for to see :

For he is known both worthy, wise, and true,  
In chance he would rather on women rue,

Men on your men, they have done them such dear,  
When he them sees, it moves him ay to wear :

He may not skaith, although I do not vail,  
To help this Land, I would make my travell:

The Lords all, of her desire was fain,  
Whereto the King made instance into plain,

That

That she might pass: The King with awkward w  
Half into yre he gave consent theretill.  
Some of them said, the Queen loved Wallace,  
For the great voice of his hie noblenes.  
An hardy man, that is seemly withall,  
Great favour will of Fortune to him fall,  
Anent women is seen in many place.  
So happened now in this time of Wallace:  
In his rising he was a lover true,  
And choos'd one, but Englishmen her slew.  
Yet said they nocht, the Queen would on her t  
As for his love such travel for to make.  
Now love or leave, or for help of their land,  
I make rehearse, as I in old writ fand.  
She graithed her upon a goodly wise,  
With gold and gear, and folk at her devise:  
Ladies with her, none other would they send,  
And old Priests, that well the countrey kend.  
Leave I the Queen to message ready dight,  
And speak further of Wallace travel right.

The worthy Scots amongst their enemies rad  
Destruction great upon them have they made,  
Wasted the land about on either side,  
No war-men then durst in their wayes abide.  
They ransomed none, but to the death them dig  
In many stead made fire broad and bright.  
The Host was glad, and in a good estate,  
No power was that would make them debate.  
Great riches wan of gold and gear theretill,  
Leaving enough to take at their own will.  
In awful fear they travel through the land,  
Made biggings bare that they before them fand.

eat harmkins brake of steads stark and strong,  
 These wight war-men of travel thought not long.  
 Both in the land right earnestly they sought,  
 Saint Albans, but harm there did they nought.  
 The Pryor sent them wine and vennison,  
 Freshed the Host with great food and fusion.  
 The night appeared when they were at that place,  
 When harbored they from thence a little space.  
 Choos'd a stead where they should bide all night,  
 Tent on ground, and pavilions proudly pight,  
 To a vail beside a river fair,  
 Neither side where wild beasts made repara.  
 Watches out, that wisely could them keep,  
 Supper went, and timeously could sleep.  
 Meat and drink they have sufficience.

The night was short, overdrave the darkful chance,  
 CHAP. V. How the Queen of England came  
 and spake with Wallace.

He merry day sprang up from the Orient,  
 With beams bright illuminat the Occident;  
 After Titan, Phœbus upris'd fair,  
 High in his Sphear the signs made declare.  
 Zephyrus began his mighty morrow course,  
 The sweet vapour did from the ground resource.  
 The donk dew from the heaven down did vail,  
 Every meid, both firth, forrest and dail:  
 The fresh river amongst the rocks rang, (sang)  
 Through green branches, where birds blythly  
 With joyous voice in heavenly harmony:  
 Then Wallace thought it was no time to ly:  
 He blessed him, then suddenly up he rose,  
 Take the air, out of his tent he goes.

Master John Blaire was ready hastily,  
 To Gods service bowned right reverently :  
 When that was done, Wallace could him arra  
 In his armour, which was both good and gay.  
 His shining shield that burnisht was full bein :  
 His leg harness, that clasped was full clean,  
 Pullance gries he clasped on full fast,  
 A closse birney with many sikker cast.  
 Breast plait, braisses rhat worthy were in wear,  
 Beside him forth ȝop could his basnet bear :  
 His glittering gloves graven on either side,  
 He seemed well in battell for to bide.  
 A good Girdle, and then a burely brand,  
 A staff of steel he gripped in his hand.  
 The host him blessed, and prayed God of his grace  
 Him to convoy from all mistempered case.  
 Adam Wallace, and Boyd, forth with him yeed  
 Endlong a river, out through a Forrest meid :  
 And as they walked over the fields green,  
 Out of the South they saw where that the Queen  
 Toward the Host came ryding soberly,  
 Fifty Ladies were in her company,  
 Wailes of wit, and deemed of renown,  
 Some widows were, and some of Religion.  
 And seven Priests that were entred in age :  
 Wallace to such did never great outrage,  
 But if to him they made a great offence.  
 Thus they approached on toward their presence.  
 At the Pavilion where they the Lyon saw,  
 To ground they light, and then on knees they saw  
 Praying for peace, they cry, with piereous cheer :  
 Earl Malcome said : Our chifcain is not here,

he bade her rise, and said: It was not right,  
 Queen on knees to bow to lower wight.  
 Up by the hand the Earl hath her cane,  
 Out over they went, to *Wallace* have they gane;  
 When she him saw, she would have kneeled down  
 Arms soon he caught this Queen with Crown,  
 And killed her withouten words more,  
 So did he never to no *Sutheron* before.  
 Madame, he said, right welcome mot ye be:  
 How pleased you our Hosting for to see?  
 Right well, she said, of friendship have we need;  
 God grant ye will our errand for to speed.  
 After we must, suppose it like us ill,  
 But trust us well, it is contrair our will.  
 We shal remain, with this Lord I must gang,  
 From your presence we shal not carry lang.  
 The Earl and he unto the Pavilion yeed,  
 With good advice to deem more of this deed.  
 The Counsel soon *Wallace* gart call them to  
 Words, he said, ye wot what is ado,  
 Of their coming my self hath no pleasance,  
 And therefore must we work with ordinance,  
 Men may be come tempting into wear,  
 Amongst fools that cannot them forbear:  
 By not this by these, or by the Queen,  
 Now it be not good that she should mean:  
 Example take of long time passed by,  
*Runseavil* the treason was plainly,  
 Women made that *Ganzeton* with him broughte  
 Turkie wine forbear they could they nought  
 Use in war gart them desire their will, (ill.)  
 Which brought King CHARLES to felon loss &

The flour of France without redemption,  
 Through that foul deed was broght to confusione  
 Command your men therefore in private wise,  
 On pain of life they work not on such guise.  
 None speak with them but wise men of great valour  
 That Lords are, and sworn to this Counsel.  
 His charge they did as goodly as they mought,  
 This ordinance through all the Host was wrought  
 He and the Earle both to the Queen they went  
 Received her fair, and brought her to the tent,  
 To dinner bowned as goodly as they can,  
 And served was with many likely man.  
 Good purveyance the Queen had with her brogh  
 An assay she took of all that good her thought.  
*Wallace* perceived, and said : We have no dread,  
 I cannot trow that Ladies will do that deed,  
 To poyson men, all *England* for to win.  
 The Queen answered : If poyson be therein,  
 Of any thing that is brought here with me,  
 Upon my self first sorrow ye shal see.  
 Soon after meat a Marshal gart all absent,  
 But Lords, and they to the Counsel that went:  
 Ladies appeared in presence with the Queen.  
*Wallace* asked : What her coming might mean?  
 For peace she said, that we have to you sought;  
 This burning war in baill hath many brought.  
 Ye grant us grace for him that died on tree.  
*Wallace* answered : Madame, that may not be  
*England* hath done so great harms unto us,  
 We may not pass, and lightly leave it thus.  
 Yes, said the Queen, for Christen folk we are:  
 For God's sake, since we desire no mair,

Ye ought have peace. He said: That we deny,  
 he perfect cause then shal I show for why:  
 You seek no peace, but for your own avail,  
 When that your King *Scot land* had gripped hail.  
 Or no kin thing that he before him fand.  
 He would not thole the right blood in the Land,  
 But refst their rent, then put themselves to dead:  
 Ransome of gold might make us no remead:  
 His fell false war shal on himself be seen.  
 Then soberly to him answered the Queen:  
 Of these wrongs amends were most fair.  
 Mad'sme, he said, of him we ask no mair:  
 But that he would bide us into battel,  
 And God be Judge, he knows the matter hail.  
 Much thing, she said, it were not good, think me:  
 Peace now were best, if it might purchast be.  
 Would ye grant peace, and crews with us to take,  
 Through all *Eng land* we shal gar prayers make,  
 For you and them, that in the war were lost.  
 Then Wallace said: where such cometh through  
 Prayer of force where so that it be wroeght, (boast)  
 Ous helps either little, or else nought.  
 Barely, she said, thus wise men hath us kend,  
 After wars, peace is the final end.  
 Wherefore ye should of your great malice cease:  
 The end of wars, is Charity and Pece.  
 Peace is in Heaven, with bliss and lestandness;  
 We shal beseech the Lord of his hie grace,  
 To command peace, then we may do no mair:  
 Madame, he said, ere your prayers come there,  
 Ends of *Eng land* we think then for to have,  
 That set ye thus on wars for to fave,

From violent wars that we think not to dwel ?  
 Madame, he said, the truth I shall you tell :  
**A**fter the date of *Alexanders reign*,  
 Our land three years stood desolate but King  
 Kept full well at concord in good state,  
 Throgh twa that claimed there hapned great  
 So earnestly accord them not they can, (b)  
 Your King they asked to be their over-man,  
 Shly he laid in strengths of *Scotland*,  
 The *Kingrike* then he took at his own hand:  
 He made a King against the righteous law,  
 For he of him should hold the Region aw :  
 Contrare his band were all the whole barnage,  
 For *Scotland* yet was never in thirlage.  
**G**reat *Iulius* that tribute took of all,  
 His winning was of *Scotland* but right smal.  
**T**hen your false King under colour but mair,  
 Through band he made to *Bruce* that is our hei  
 Undid that King which he before had made,  
 Through all *Scotland* with great power they rad  
 To *Bruce* sen syne he keeped no cunnand.  
**H**e said : He would not go to conquer land  
 To other men, and thus the case befel :  
 Then *Scotland* through he demanded him sell :  
 Slew our Elders, great pity is to see :  
 In prison then long time they keeped mee,  
 While I at last was casten out for dead.  
**T**hanked be GOD, he sent me some remead,  
 Venged to be I proved all my might.  
**F**eil of that kin to death since I have dight.  
**T**he rage of youth gart me desire a wife,  
 That rewed I sore, and will do all my life.

traitour Knight but mercy gart her die,  
 he *Heslrig*, but for despite of me :  
 en rang I forth in travail, wars and pain,  
 while we redeemed part of our Land again.  
 en your Counsel desir'd of us a trew,  
 which made *Scotland* full graithly for to rew.  
 o that peace they set a subtil Heire,  
 en eighteen score to death they hanged there,  
 at Nobles were, and worthy of renown.  
 coat armour eldest .. that Region:  
 e women als that dolefully was dight,  
 at death me think to venge in all our might :  
 ut of my minde that death will never slide,  
 ill God me take from this false world so wide!  
 Sutheron then I can no pity have,  
 ur men in wars I never think to save.  
 e bright tears was pity to behold,  
 st from his eyes, when he this tale had told.  
 e Queen weeped for pity of *Wallace*.  
 ace, she said, wo worth the wicked case :  
 cursed time that *Heslrig* was born,  
 ny worthy through his deed are forlorn.  
 should have pain that causeless such one sleugh  
 gland since then hath bought it dear enough,  
 ough she had been a Queen, or a Prince.  
 dame, he said, as God give me good grace,  
 neess or Queen, of what state so they be,  
 to her time she was as dear to me.  
 allace, she said, of this talk we will cease;  
 e mends thereof is good prayer and peace!  
 rant, he said, of me as now no mair,  
 is is right nought, but eeking of my care.

The Queen found well, language nothing her bid  
 She trowed with gold that he might be overset.  
 Three thousand pound of finest gold so red,  
 She gart be brought to *Wallace* in that stead.  
 Madame, he said, no such tribute we crave,  
 An other mends we world of *England* have,  
 Ere we return from this Region again,  
 Of your fierce blood that hath our elders slain,  
 For all the gold and riches of your Reign,  
 Ye get no peace, but desire of your King.  
 When she saw well gold might her not relieve,  
 Some part in sport she thought him for to prieve.  
*Wallace*, she said, ye are sleeped my love:  
 More abundantly I made me for to prove,  
 Trusting therefore your rancour for to stake,  
 Me think ye should do something for my sake!  
 Right wisely he made answer to the Queen,  
 Madame, he said, if verity were seen,  
 That ye me loved, I ought love you again:  
 These words are all for nothing but in vain:  
 In speach of love, subtillye *Sutheron* are:  
 Ye can us mock, suppose we get no mair:  
 To take a liking, and then get no pleasure,  
 Such love as that, is nothing to advance.  
 In *London*, she said, for you I suffered blame,  
 Our Counsell als will laugh when I come hame  
 So may they say: Women are fierce of thought  
 To seek friendship, and then can get right nougah.  
 Madame, ye wot how ye were hither send,  
 Ye trow we have but little for to spend.  
 First with your gold, for ye are rich, I wish,  
 Ye would us blind, since *Scots* are so nice.

When pleasant words of you and Ladies faire,  
 As who would drive the bird into a snare,  
 With a whissel pipe, for it will freshest call :  
 Madame, as yet, ye may not tempt us all.  
 Great part of good is left amongst our kin,  
 In England als we find enough to win.  
 Said she was to make answer him till,  
 Dear Sir, she said, since that it is y our will,  
 Wars or peace, what that you liketh best,  
 Let your hie wit and good counsel digest.  
 Madame, he said, now shal ye understand  
 The reason why, that I will make no band :  
 With your Ladies I cannot trews bind,  
 For your false King will soon hereafter find,  
 When he saw time, to break it at his will,  
 And plainly say, He granted not theretill.  
 Then had we none but Ladies to reprove,  
 That shal not be, by God that sits above.  
 Upon women I will no wars begin,  
 Of you in field no worship is to win.  
 All the whole peace on himself he shal take,  
 Of peace, or wars, what we happen to make.  
 The Queen granted this answer sufficient,  
 So did the rest in plain that were present.  
 His deliverance they held of great avail,  
 And strong enough to show to their Counsel.  
 Wo was the Queen her travel helped nought,  
 The gold she took that they had with her brought  
 Unto the Host right freely she it gave,  
 To every man that liked for to have.  
 Menstrels and Heraulds she gave abundantly,  
 Beseeching them, her friends that they would be.

When Wallace saw the freedom of the Queen,  
 Sadly he said : The sooth vwell hath been seen,  
 Women may tempt the vvilest hath been wrought  
 Your great gentrice it shal not be for nought,  
 We you assure, our Host shal do nothing,  
 While time ye may send message from the King;  
 If it be so that he accord, and we,  
 Then for your sake, it shal the better be.  
 Your Heralds als shal safely come and go,  
 For your freedom we shal trouble no mo,  
 She thanked him of his grant many syle,  
 And all her Lsdes on a goodly wise.  
 Gladly they drank, the Queen and good Wallace,  
 Her Lsdes als, and good Lords in that place.  
 Her leavc she took for out langer abade,  
 Five mile that night south to a Nunry rade.  
 Upon the morn to London passed they,  
 In Westminster where that the Counsel lay.  
 It needs not here now more rehearse this thing,  
 Wallace answer she gart show to the King.  
 The great commend then she to Wallace gave  
 Before the King, in presence of the lave,  
 The true Scots it should greatly applease,  
 Though Englismen thereof had little ease.  
 Of worship, wit, manhood, and governance,  
 Of freedom, truth, key of remembrance,  
 She called him there into their presence,  
 Though contrair them he stood at his defence:  
 So Chiffrain like, she sayes, as he is seen,  
 Into England I trow, hath never been.  
 Would ye of gold give him this Realms rent,  
 From honour he will not turn his intent.

en, assured ye are, while ye may message make,  
 en, Of wise Lords some part I reed you take,  
 ough to purchase peace withoutten words more,  
 or all *England* may rew this raid full sore.  
 our Heralds als to pass to him hath leave,  
 ing; shall the Host there shal no man them grieve.  
 Then thanked they the Queen for her travel,  
 The King and Lords that were of his Counsel,  
 Of her answer the King appeased was.  
 Then three great Lords they ordained to pass,  
 Their Counsel whole hath found it for the best,  
 news to take, or else they got no rest.  
 An Herauld went in all the haste he may,  
 To *Avane* wall, where that the *Scots* lay,  
 Conduct to have, till they had said their will,  
 The Counsel soon a conduct sent them till,  
 Again he past with soverance to the King.  
 Then chooled they three Lords for this same thing  
 The keen *Clifford*, that then was warden hail,  
*Bermont* and *Woodstock*, all men of meikle vail,  
 what these three wrought the rest should stâd ther,  
 The Kings self hath given them at their will. (till.  
 Soon they were brought to speaking with *Wallace*  
*Woodstock*, then shewed forth many subtil case,  
*Wallace* hath heard their *Sophisms* every deal;  
 As yet, he said, me think we mean but well.  
 In wrong ye hold, and doth us great outrage,  
 Of houies part which are our heritage,  
 Out of this peace in plain I make them known,  
 Them for to win, since that they are our own,  
*Roxburgh*, *Barwick* that ours long time hath been  
 Into the hands of King *Edward* I ween.

We ask here als by vertue of this band,  
 Our own young King by wrong led from Scotland  
 We shal have them withoutten words mair.  
 To his desire the Lords they granted there,  
 Right at his will they have consented hail:  
 For no kin thing the peace they would not fail.  
 The young *Randall* that then in *London* was,  
 The Lord of *Lorn* in this band he can ask.  
 The Earl of *Buchan*, but then in tender age,  
 After he grew a man of great vassalage.  
*Cumming* and *Fowles* he gart deliver als,  
 Which after was to King *Robert* full false.  
*Wallace* fled over, and durst not bide that mure,  
 In Picardie to ask him was no bute:  
 But he would rather have had that false Knight,  
 Then a thousand of fairest gold so bright.  
 The *Bruce* he asked, but he was had away,  
 Before that time, to *Calice* many a day.  
 King *Edward* proved that they might not him get,  
 Of *Glocester* his uncle had him set,  
 That *Calice* had whole into his keeping.  
*Wallace* that time got not his righteous King,  
 The Earl *Patrick* als from London they send,  
 With *Wallace* to go, as well before is kend.  
 Of this matter, and finall governance,  
 To King *Edward* he gave up his leadgeance.  
 And took to hold of Scotland evermair:  
 With full glad heart *Wallace* received him there.  
 They honoured him right reverently as Lord,  
 The *Scots* were all rejoiced at that concord.  
 An hundred horse with young Lords of renown,  
 So *Wallace* cams, all fred of that prifon.

Under his seal King Edward then gart send,  
 For to give over, and make a final end,  
 Roxburgh, Barwick, which were of meikle vail,  
 To Scottish-men, and all the bounds hail.  
 For five years trews they promised by their band.  
 Then Wallace said: We will pass near Scotland,  
 Ere ought be sealed, and therefore make us bown.  
 Again we will beside Northallartown,  
 Where King Edward fist battel heght to me:  
 As we began, there shall it ended be.  
 Greet well the Queen, he charged the message,  
 It is for her that we left our voyage.  
 A day he set when they should meet him there,  
 And seal the pace, wit boutten process mair,  
 Upon the morn the Host but more advise,  
 Tranointed North upon a goodly wise,  
 To let the cryst that Wallace had them made,  
 The English message came but more abade;  
 They sealed the peace, without longer delay:  
 The message then upon the second day  
 To London went in all the haste they can,  
 The worthy Scots with many likely man,  
 To Bamburgh came, with all their power hail,  
 Sixty thousand, all Scots of great avail,  
 Ten dayes before All-hallow-eve they fure,  
 On Lambmas day they lighted on Carham mure  
 There lodged they with pleasure as they mough  
 while on the morn their Priests to the then brog  
 In Carham Kirk, and seized in his hand  
 Roxburgh keyes, as they had made command,  
 And Barwick als, which Englishmen had lang  
 They freed the folk in England for to gang:

For their lives ished off either place,  
 They durst not well bide reckoning with Wallace,  
 Captain he made in Barwick of renown,  
 That worthy was, good Christel of Setown.  
 Keeper he made to Roxburgh Castle wight,  
 Sir John Ramsay, a wise and worthy Knight.  
 Then Wallace self with Earl Patrick in plain,  
 To Dumbarrode, and restored him again.  
 In his Castle, and als his heritage,  
 With the consent of all the whole barnage,  
 When Wallace was agreed with this Lord,  
 To rule the Realm, he made him goodly lord.  
 Scotland out over from Ross to Sulway land,  
 He rode it thrie, and statute all the lind.  
 In the Lennox a while he made repair,  
 Sir John Menteith a while was Captain there,  
 Als twise before he had his gossip been,  
 But no freindship betwixt them then was seen,  
 Two moneths still he dwelt in Dumbartane,  
 An houſe he founded upon a rock of stane,  
 Then he left there to build it to the hight,  
 Then to the March again he rode right,  
 At Roxburgh they choosed him a place,  
 A good tower there he gart build in short space,  
 The King som stood in good worship and ease,  
 Has none so great durst his neighbour displease,  
 He able ground gart labour thriftily,  
 Sweet and fruit there grew abundantly.  
 Has never before since this was called Scotland,  
 Such wealth and peace both at once in the Land.  
 He sent for twice to Bruce of Huntingtown,  
 Alēching him to come and take his Crown.

unsel he took at false Saxons, alace,  
had never hap in life to get Wallace:  
ee years as thus the Realm stood in good peace  
this saying me worth is for to ceas,  
further forth of Wallace will I tell,  
his life what aventure yet befell.  
Here endeth the first Conquest of Scotland.



## THE NINTH BOOK.

### CHAP. I.

#### *How Wallace past into France.*

Royal King then reigned into France,  
Great brute he heard of Wallace governace:  
The proves, pryses, and of his worthy deed,  
forward, fair, commended of manhood:  
h humble, true, and proved well of pris,  
honour, truth, and void of covetise.  
noble King reigned in Royaltie,  
great delite this Wallace for to see:  
knew right well shortly to understand,  
great suprise and ov'rset of England,  
arveiled als of Wallace small power,  
but a King took such a Realm to stier,  
inst England and gart their malice cease,  
they desired with good to take peace.  
right anone a Herald he gart call,  
horter times he hath rehearsed all,  
his intent compleasid to an end,  
in Scotland he bade him he shold wend  
And

And he wrot right with very great honour,  
To William Wallace as a Conquerour.

**O** Loved Leed, with worship wise and wise  
Through very help in holding of thy right  
Through right rescuing of thy native Land,  
With Gods grace against thy foes to stand  
In defence, helper of thy righteous blood.  
**O** worthy Birth, and blessed be thy food,  
As it is read in Prophesie beforne :  
An happy time for *Scotland* thou was born :  
I thee beseech with all humilitie,  
My close letter thou would conceive and see,  
As your brother, a christen King of *France*.  
To the bearer ye hear and give credence.  
The Herauld him bowned, and to the ship is gone  
In *Scotland* soon he comes unto one.  
But Herauld-like he seeks his presence,  
On land he went, and made no residence :  
In every stead where he presumed there,  
So on a day he found him into *Aire*,  
In good effear, and man-like company.  
The Herauld then with honour reverently  
Hath salust him upon a goodly manner :  
And he again with humble homely chear,  
Received him into right goodly wise.  
The Herauld then with worship to devise,  
Betook to him the Kings writing of *France*,  
*Wallace* on knee with lowly obeysance.  
Right reverently for the worship of *Scotland*,  
When he it read, and had it understand,  
At this Herauld he asked his credence,  
With asper speech and manly countenance;

and he him told, as I have said before,  
the Kings desire, what needs words more ?  
wiche hie honour, and the great nobleness,  
right your manhood, well known in many place.  
likes als well your worship to advance,  
ye were born a fiedge man of *France*.  
since his Region is flonre of Realms seen,  
the great band of kindness you between :  
d since this Realm stands in such safety,  
were worship his presence for to see.  
*Wallace* conceived withouten tarrying,  
the great desire of this most noble King :  
en to him said : So God of Heaven me save,  
eafter soon an answer ye shal have,  
your desire that you have shown me till :  
elcome ye are with a free hearty will.  
e Herald bode unto the twenty day,  
ith *Wallace* still, in good welfare and play,  
nsumed the time with worship and pleasance,  
good advise made his deliverance.  
ith his own hand he wrote unto the King,  
his intent as touching to this thing.  
ight rich reward he gave the Herald to,  
d him convoyed when he had leave to go,  
ut of the Town with goodly companie,  
leave he took, and went unto the sea :  
spurpose was to see the King of *France*,  
ood *Wallace* then hath made his purveyance,  
arest but wear to *Saint Johnstoun* could fare,  
counsel then he had gart ordain there :  
to his stead choosed a Gouvernour,  
keep the Land, a man of great honour;

James good Lord the Steward of Scotland,  
Which father was, as stories beares on hand,  
To good Walter, which was of hie parage,  
*Marjory Bruce* then got in marriage.

Thereof as now to speak I have no space.  
It is well knownen, thanked be Gods grace,  
And to the Herauld withoutten residence,  
How he appeared unto the Kings presence:  
From the *Rochel* the land soon hath he tane,  
Out over the land he graithed him to gain,  
Seeking the King as goodly as he may:

So to the Court he passed on a day,  
To *Paris* went, as pierlesse of renown,  
This King that time held Pallace in that town.  
When he him saw, hath graithly understand,  
He spiered tydings, the welfare of *Scotland*.  
The Herauld said into these terms short,  
That all was good, he had the more comfort.  
Saw thou *Wallace* the Chiftain of that Land?  
And he said, Yea, that dare I take on hand,  
A worthier wight this day is living none,  
In way of war als far as I have gone.

The hie worship, and the great noblenesse:  
The good welfare, pleasure and worthinesse:  
The rich reward was worthy for to see,  
That for your sake he kythed upon me.  
And his answer in writ he hath you sent.  
The King received it with a good intent.

O Royal Roy, and righteous crowned King,  
Renowned of nobleness and vertues most condigd  
Ye know this well by other mothen me,  
How that our Realm stands in perplexities.

fierce Nation that we are Neighbours to,  
when it pleaseth them, they make us ay ado ;  
band may be made of sufficiance,  
ay in it they find a variance.

wait a time, will God that I may be,  
thin a year I will your presence see.  
this answer well pleased was the King.  
ve I them thus in Royalty to reign,  
gled comfort, right as I have you told;  
Wallace forth I will my purpose hold.

## C H A P. II.

Wallace past into France, and fough't with  
the Red-River and vanquished him.

to April the one and twenty day,  
The Kalends changed as we use to say,  
lusty time of Mays fresh coming,  
estial great blythnesse in to bring.  
ncipal moneth forsooth it may be seen,  
heavenly hews upon the tender green :  
en old Saturn his cloudy course hath gone,  
which hath been both bird and beasts bone.  
phorus also with his sweet Vapour,  
comfort hath by working of Dame Nature.  
fructuous thing into the Earth aboun,  
t ruled is under the hie Regioun.  
er Luna in following of the sea.  
en bright Phœbus into his Schemes hie,  
e Bulls course so taken hath his place,  
d Jupiter was into Crabes face :  
hen Aries the hot sign cholericke,  
to the Ram which hath his rowms rike :

Thetis.

That is had his place and his mansion  
 In *Capricornus* the sign of the Lyon :  
 Gentle *Jupiter* with his mild ordinance,  
 Both herb and tree converts into pleasure ;  
 And flesh *Flora* her flowry mantle spred  
 In every vaile, both houp, hill, and meid :  
 In this same time ¶ for this mine Author sayes  
*Wallace* to passe off *Scotland* took his wayes,  
 By short advice he shap him to the sea,  
 And fifty men took in his company.  
 He let no word then walk of his passage,  
 Lest *Englishmen* had stopped his voyage :  
 Nor took no leave of Lords of Parliament :  
 He wist full well they would not all consent  
 To suffer him out of the Land to go,  
 For they anone without witting of mo,  
 He gart foresee, and ordain well the ship,  
 And these were they past in his fellowship.  
 Two *Wallaces* was his kinsmen full near,  
*Crawfurd, Cleland*, to him were holden dear.  
 At *Kirkcubright* he ordained his passage,  
 Sea-men he set, and gave them goodly wage,  
 A good new barge right worthily wrought for  
 They wanted not of wine, victuall, nor gear.  
 Wot ye they were a goodly company  
 Of waied men had wrought full hardily :  
 Bon-ailies drank right gladly on the morrow,  
 Then leave they took, & with great God to bor.  
 Boats were shot forth, and from the land they fast  
 With glad hearts at once in they went,  
 Unto the ship they rowed haftily,  
 The sea-men then working full earnestly,

bkers wand in wisely on either side,  
 eir leads cast out, and waited well the tyde :  
 sailes fall, and took their course anone,  
 goodly wind out of the right airth came :  
 eiks on forestam ruled well their gear :  
 ads on Leiburd, with a Lordly fear.  
 yes ones laid out, to lock their passage sound,  
 ith full sail from Scotland forth they found :  
 illed whole over the day and als the night :  
 pon the morn when that the Sun shined bright,  
 eir ship-master unto the top he went,  
 uth-east he saw that troubled his intent,  
 keen sailes all arrayed on a raw,  
 colour red, that toward them could draw.  
 he glittering Sun upon them shewed bright,  
 he sea about illuminate with the light.  
 he mans sprit was in an extasie,  
 own he went soon, and said right sorrowfullie :  
 ace, alace, that ever I was born.  
 Without remed our lives are all forlorn.  
 cursed time I took this cure on hand,  
 he best Chiscain, and rescue of Scotland,  
 ever recklesly I have tane upon me,  
 With weak power to bring him through the sea.  
 forced nought, would God I were torment,  
 Wallace might with worship scape unsaint.  
 hen Wallace saw, and heard this mans moan,  
 to comfort him with good will is he gone,  
 aster, he said, what hath annoyed thee ?  
 Not for my self, this man said piteouslie :  
 ut of one thing I dare well undertairn,  
 though all were here the ships of broad Britain,

Part should we lose, except Fortune had sworne  
 The best war-man in sea is us beforne,  
 Living this day, and King is of the sea.  
*Wallace* soon spiered, Wots thou what he may be?  
 The Red-reaver they call him in his style,  
 That I him saw, O cursed be the while :  
 For mine own life I would no mourning make:  
 Is no man born that yon tyrant will take.  
 He saveth none for gold, nor other good,  
 But slayes and drowns all derly in the flood.  
 He gets no grace though he were King or Knight,  
 This sixteen years he hath done great unright,  
 The power is so strong he hath to steir,  
 May none escape that comes in his danger.  
 Would ye him boord, no boot is to begin,  
 The lowest ship that is his flot within :  
 My self is done unto the doleful dead.  
 Then *Wallace* said : Since thou cannot remeade  
 Tell me his feir, and how I shal him know,  
 What is his use, and then go lodge thee low.  
 The ship-man said : Full well ye may him ken,  
 By graith tokenes, full clearly by his men.  
 His coat armour is seen in many stead,  
 All battel bown, in rayment all of red.  
 This foremost ship that pursues us so fast,  
 Himself is in, and will not be agast :  
 He will you hail, when that they come you neare,  
 Without carry then make you strike and steer :  
 Himself will enter first full hardily.  
 These are the signs that you shal ken him by,  
 A bar of blew into his shining shield,  
 A bend of white, desiring ay the field :

wondered betokens blood and hardiment,  
The white courage, increaseth his intent :  
The blew he bears, for he is a Christen man :  
Ay by him answered William Wallace than :  
Though he be Christen, this is no Christen deed :  
Under loft, the Lord God mot us speed.

ke : ship-master, and the steirs-man also,  
To the how but bade he gart them go :  
Fifty men withouten longer rest,  
Wallace gart ray into their armour prest,  
Eight and fourty on loft boord laid they law :  
William Crawford then to him can he caw,  
d said, Thou canst some part of ship-man fare,  
ou hast been used in the town of Aire :  
ray thee take this doctrine well of me,  
ok that thou stand straitly by the tree :  
hen they bid streik, to service be thou bain :  
hen I thee warn, draw up the sail again.  
eland cousin, come take the steer in hand,  
are on the wail near by thee shal I stand.  
d guide our ship, as now I say no mair :  
e Barge began with a full warlike fare :  
mself on loft was with a drawn sword,  
d bade the steirs-man lay endlong the boord.  
loud he cryed, streik dogs or ye shal die.  
wallfurd let down the sail a little wie.  
ne Captain soon lap in, and would not stint.  
Wallace hath him then by the gorget hent,  
the over-loft kest him where that he stood,  
While mouth and nose all rushed out of blood.  
Forged knife braithiy he braided out,  
S war-ships were lapped them about :

The Barge clipped, but they not fastned fast,  
*Crawfurd* drew sail, shot by, and off them p  
 The Reaver cryed, with piteous voice so clear,  
 Grace of his life, for him that bought us dear.  
 Mercy, he cryed, for him that died on Rood,  
 Leisure to mend, I have spilt meikle blood.  
 For my trespass I would make some remead,  
 Many sakeless I have gart put to dead.

*Wallace* wist wel thoughte to death was broug  
 From them to scape no wise might he nought,  
 And of his life some rescue might he make,  
 A better purpose right soon then can he take:  
 And als he rewed, for his life had been ill:  
 In Latine tongue right thus he said him till:  
 I never took man that enemie was to me.  
 For Gods sake my life ye grant to me.  
 Both knife, and sword, he took from him alone,  
 Up by the hand as prisoner hath him tane.  
 Upon his sword sharply he gart him swear,  
 From that day forth he should him never dear:  
 Command thy men, said *Wallace*, to our peace  
 Their shot of guns, that was not eith to cease.  
 Their casting were awfull on either side,  
 The *Red-reaver* commanded them to bide:  
 Held up a gloove in token of the truw,  
 His men beheld, and well the senzie knew.  
 Left off their shot, the sign when that they saw,  
 His greatest Barge toward him cam he caw.  
 Let be your war, these are friends at one:  
 I trow to God our worst hours are gone.  
 He asked *WWallace*, to do what was his will:  
 With short advise, righ: thus he said him till,

the *Rochel* I would ye gart them sail,  
 Englishmen we wot not what may ail,  
 them commanded withouten words mair,  
 in sail and wind toward the *Rochel* fare :  
 there, Will God, our purpose is to be :  
 look well about for scurriours in the sea.  
 charge they wrought in all the haste they can,  
 Wallace desired to talk more with this man  
 sely he speared, In vvhat land art thou born ?  
 France, he said, and mine Elders be born :  
 dthere we had some part of heritage,  
 though fierce Fortune hath broght me in a rage.  
 Wallace yet spierd: How came thou in this life ?  
 sooth, he said, but through a sudden strife.  
 hapned I into the Kings presence,  
 er recklesly to do a great offence :  
 worthy man of good kin and renown,  
 at through my deed was put to confusion,  
 ed of one straik, what needs words more ?  
 mends it nougth, though I repent it sore,  
 though friends of Court I scaped off that place,  
 d never since could get the Kings grace.  
 of our kin they gart for my sake die.  
 time I saw it might no better be,  
 leave the Land, that me behoved on need :  
 on a day to *Burdeous* I yeed,  
 English ship so got we on a night,  
 sea labout full earnestly us dight,  
 me assembled misdoers other mo,  
 Within short time we multiplied so,  
 Where few that might against our power gang.  
 tyranny thus have we reigned lang.

These sixteen years I have been on the sea,  
 And done great harm, therefore full wo is me,  
 I saved none for gold nor great ransome,  
 But slew and drowned in the sea all down.  
 Favour I did to folk of sundry Land,  
 But French-men no favour of me fand :  
 They got no grace, so far as I might reign,  
 Als on the sea I cleiped was a King.  
 Now see I well that my fortune is went,  
 Vanquisht with one that gart me sore repent.  
 Who would have said this famine day at morn,  
 I should with one thus lightly down be born?  
 In great haiching my men would it have tane,  
 My self heght als to have match'd any twain;  
 But I have found the very plain contrare,  
 Here I give over robbery for evermair :  
 In such misrule I shall never arms bear,  
 But if it be in honest use of wear.  
 Now I have told part of my bliss and pain,  
 For Gods sake now some kindness show again,  
 Mine heart will break but I wot what ye be,  
 Outrageously that hath rebuted me :  
 For well I trow'd that living had been nane,  
 By strength of force might me as prisoner tane :  
 Except Wallace, that hath redeemed Scotland,  
 The best is called this day living of hand :  
 Into his wars were worship for to wake,  
 Into this world I trow he hath no maik.  
 Wallace smiled, and said, Friend, it may be,  
 Scotland hath need of many such as thee.  
 What is thy name? tell me so have thou seil.  
 Forsooth he said, Thomas of Longovesit.

Well brook thou it, thus endeth all our strife,  
me hope to please GOD, in mending of thy life :  
by faichfull friend my self thinks for to be,  
nd als my name I shal soon tell to thee :  
or chance of war thou should no mourning make,  
sweird will work, thy Fortune must thou take ;  
am that man that thou advarcest hie,  
nd but short time since I came to the sea.

If Scotland born, my right name is Wallace.  
Unknee he fell, and thanked GOD of grace :  
dare avow that yeelden is mine hand,  
To the best man this day that is livand.  
Orsooth, he said, this pleaseth me meikle more,  
ben of florings ye give me sixy score.

hen Wallace said : Thou art here now through  
y purpose is to pass now into France, (chance,  
nto the King, since I am bown to pass :  
o my reward thy peace I think to ask.

ace I would have fain of my native King,  
nd no longer then in this Realm to reign.  
hen thou take leave to come from it again,  
to thy service I think for to remain.

service, he said. Thomas, it may not be,  
at good friendship, as I shall keep to thee.

art draw the wine, and each one merry made,  
he ships by then were in the *Rochel rade*.

The red blasons, as they had born in wear,  
the town was soon into a sudden fear :

The Red-reaver they said was at their hand,  
optrare whose strength might none against him  
ome ships fled &c som the land hath tane, (stands;  
unions blew, and Trumpets many ane.

When Wallace saw the people was on fier,  
 He gave command no ships should nearer pier,  
 But his own barge in their haven gart he draw.  
 The folk was glad when they the banner saw:  
 Full well they knew in gold the red Lyon,  
 Let up the port, received them in the town.  
 They sovered him for all they had there brought  
 The red Navie unto the haven sought,  
 On land then went where that them liked to passe  
 Right few wist there what Scottish man Wallace  
 But wel they thought he was a goodly man,  
 And honoured him with all the craft they can.  
 Those four dayes Wallace remained there,  
 These men he called when he was bown to fare  
 He them commanded upon that coast to bide,  
 While he hem fred, for chance that might betide  
 Bear you evenly, what good that ever ye spend  
 Live on your own while I you tydings send.  
 Gar sell your ships, and make you men of peace  
 It were good time of wickednes to cease.  
 Your Captain shal pass to the King with me,  
 Through help of GOD, I shal his warrant be.  
 He gart graith him in suite with his own men,  
 Was no man there that might well Thomas ken  
 Likely he was, manly of governance,  
 Like to the Scots, by manly countenance,  
 Save of his tongue, that Scots had he none,  
 In Latine well, it might have sufficed one.  
 Thus past they on in all the haste they may,  
 To Paris town they went upon a day:  
 Tydings was brought of Wallace to the King,  
 So great desire he had of no kin thing,

in that time while he had seen *Wallace*,  
 somet himself he waited upon case :  
 a garden where he gart them be brought  
 his presence, with manlike feir they sought.  
 two and fifty at once all kneeling down,  
 and salust him as Roy of most renown,  
 with ruled speech in so goodly advise,  
 France could no more nurture them devise.  
 The Queen had leave, and came in her effer,  
 meikle she heard of *Wallace* deed in wear.  
 What needs more of courtesie to tell ?  
 They keepe well that to the Scots befell.  
 Kings fare I dare make no rehearse,  
 feeble minde, my troubled sp'rit transverse,  
 the rich service, what needs words mair ?  
 Right none be found, but it was present there.  
 On after meat the King to parlour went,  
 with goodly Lords, there *Wallace* was present.  
 Then communed they of many sundry thing,  
 speak with him great desire had the King.  
 him he spiered of wars the governance.  
 answered him with manly countenance,  
 every point, so far as he had feel,  
 Latine tongue, right naturally and well.  
 The King conceived soon by his hie courage,  
 that war-men used by reif in their passage :  
 what mind the Red-reaver then was,  
 he had how he let *Wallace* passe.  
 him he said, Ye are something to blame,  
 might have sent with your Herald from home,  
 power to bring you through the sea.  
 thank you, Sir, thereof enough had we :

Few men may pass where they find no peril:  
 Right wheen may keep where none is to affai  
*VWallace*, he said, thereof marvel have I,  
 A tyrant reigns in yre full cruelly,  
 Upon the sea, that great sorrow hath wrought  
 Might we him get, it should not be for nougat  
 Born of this land, a native man to me,  
 Therefore on us the greatest harm doth he.  
 Then *Thomas* quoke, and changed countenanc  
 He heard the King his ill deeds disaduance.  
*Wallace* beheld, and fenziet in a part,  
 Forsooth, he said, we found none in that airt,  
 That proffered us any such unkindnes.  
 By your leave, Sir, I speak in homliness.  
 Trow ye by sight ye could the Squyer knaw?  
 Full long it is since time that I him saw,  
 But these words of him are but in vain,  
 Ere he come here right good men will be slain.  
 Then *Wallace* said: Here have I brought with me  
 Of likely men that dwelt in our Countrie:  
 Which of all these would ye call him most like  
 Amongst them blent this Royal Roy most rike  
 Vized them well, both stature and courage,  
 Manner, mackdome, their fashion, and visage.  
 Sadly he said, advised soberly,  
 That largest man which stands next you by,  
 Would I call him, by mackdome to devise.  
 These are nothing but words of office.  
 Before the King on knees fell good *Wallace*:  
 O Royal Roy, of hie honour and grace,  
 With waste words I will you not trouble,  
 Now I will speak some thing for mine avail:

il: barren land hath been overset with war,  
 flail Saxon's seed that doth us meikle dear,  
 I, in our elders, destroyed our righteous blood,  
 sted our land of gold and other good,  
 ght ye are here with might and Royalty,  
 ght ye should have to our adversity,  
 us support for kindnes of the band  
 which is confirmed betwixt you and Scotland:  
 I am here for your charge and pleasance,  
 life-lait is but honest chevisance:  
 wer of Realms, forsooth is this Region,  
 my reward I would have great guerdon.  
 place, he said, ask what so ye would have,  
 od gold or land shall not be long to crave.  
 Wallace answered: So ye grant it to me,  
 at I would have, it shal soon chosen be.  
 ut ever ye ask that is in this Region.  
 shall it have, except my wife and Crown.  
 thanked him of his great kindliness,  
 my reward shal be asked of grace;  
 ice to this man I broght with me throgh chance  
 re I quite claim all other gifts in France.  
 is same is he, if that ye knew him well,  
 at ye of speake Thomas of Longoveil:  
 rigour ye desired he should be slain,  
 im restore unto your peace again:  
 ceive him fair as liedge man of your land.  
 e King marvelled, and could in study stand,  
 fectly he knew that it was Longoveil:  
 him forgave his trespass every deal,  
 t for his sake that had him hither brought,  
 rgold nor good, nor else he did it nought.

Wallace, he said, I had lever of good land,  
 Ten thousand pound had ceased in thine hand;  
 That I have said, shall holden be in plain,  
 Here I receive *Thomas* to peace again.  
 Dearer to me then ever he was before,  
 All for your sake, though it were meikle more,  
 But I would wit how this matter befell.  
*Wallace* answered, The truth I shall you tell,  
 Then he rehearsed what hapned on that day,  
 As ye before mine Author hath heard say.  
 When the good King hath heard the sudden a  
 Upon the sea, before sight of *Wallace*:  
 The King him held right worthy to advance,  
 He saw in him manhood and governance.  
 So did the Queen, and all the other Lords,  
 Each wight of him great honour then records.  
 He purchast peace for all the power hail,  
 Fourteen hundred was left at the *Rochel*.  
 Gart cry them free true servants to the King,  
 And never again for fault into such thing.  
 When *Thomas* was restored to his right,  
 Of his own hand the King had made him Knight,  
 After he gave state to his nearest heir,  
 And made himself with *Wallace* for to fare. (a  
 Thus he hath broght these men from reif throu  
 By sudden chance of him and wight *Wallace*,  
 Thus leave we them in worship and pleasance,  
 At liking still with the good King of France.

## C H A P. III.

*How Wallace past in Guyen;*

**T**Hese twenty dayes he lodged into rest,  
 So to remaine, he thought it not the best.

ill into peace he could not long endure:  
and; for why? contrareous it was to his nature.  
ight well he wist *Englishmen* occupied  
y en that time, therefore hath he espyed  
me jeopardie upon them for to make:  
more goodly leave he at the King can take.

If *French-men* he none would with him call,  
tell, the first time, for aventure might fall,  
y, for sir *Thomas* that service could persue.  
. Newist not well if all the lave were true.  
n call *Scottish-men* then sembled hastily,

nine hundred soon of vworthy Chevalry.  
ce, Guyen land full hastily can ride:

Raised fell fire, and wasted winnings wide.

orts they brake, and stalwart biggings wan,

ords, verfly to death brought many a *Sutheron* man.

warlike town so fand they in that land, (hand,  
Which *Schemen* heght that *English-men* had in  
oward that stead full sadly *VWallace* sought,  
y any way assail it if he mought.

rgan to have, if he mought get them out,

Knig great strength of wood there was that town about

the town stood als upon a water side,

(onto a Park that was both long and wide.

They busked them well while passed was the night.

When the Sun rose four hundred men he dight:

The lave he gart *Crawfurd* in bushment take,

If they mistred a rescue for to make.

Then *Longoveil* that ay was full savage,

With *Wallace* past as one to that skirmage.

These four hundred that was full well arrayed,

Before the town in plain battel displayed.

It was not well then known in that Countrie,  
 The Lyon in gold that awfull was to see :  
 A forrey cost, and ceased meikle good :  
 War-men within that wisely understood,  
 Soon ished out the prey for to rescue,  
 The worthy Scots fel Englishmen they slew :  
 The lave for dread fled to the town again :  
 The forrey took the prey and passed in plain,  
 Toward the Park, but power of the town  
 Isched out again in awfull battel bown :  
 A thousand whole of men of arms strang,  
 Few bode within that might to arms gang.  
 Then Wallace gart the forrayers leave the prey,  
 Assembled soon into a good array.  
 A cruel counter was at that meeting seen,  
 Of the wight War-men into their armour sheer,  
 Feil left their life upon the Sutheron side,  
 But not for thy full boldly they abide.  
 Of the Scots part then worthy men they flew :  
 William Crawfurd that well the peril knew,  
 Out of the Park he gart the bushment passe,  
 Into the field where fel men fighting was,  
 At their entry they gart full many die,  
 The Englishmen was wonder loath to flee.  
 Full worthily they wrought into that place,  
 Bade never so few so long against Wallace.  
 With such power that day as he was there,  
 On either side assailed wonder fair.  
 Into the stour so fellowly he wrought,  
 That worthy men derly to death was brought :  
 With points pierced through plaits birnist bright  
 Wallace himself, and sir Thomas the Knight,

Whom

om so they hit made never more debate.

*Sutheron* part was handled there so hate,  
that place they might no longer bide,  
of that field with sore hearts they ride,  
o the town they fled full hastily :

*Wallace* followed, and his good Chevalry,  
enting so fast into the thickest throng,  
ile in the town they entred them among.  
h him *Crawfurd* and *Longveil* the Knight,

*Richard als*, *Wallace* his cousin right :

een they were of *Scots* company,  
is hapned they among that great party.

ey, cruel Porter got upon the wall,  
ed out the pin, let the Port-culzies fall.

Englishmen saw entred was no mo,

en on the *Scots* full hardily they go.

to a wall they have their backs set,  
straiks and sore boldy about them let.

*hard Wallace* the turngrece well hath seen,  
followed fast upon the Porter keen,  
on the wall dead in a dyk him drove,  
up the port, and let in all the lave.

*men Wallace* men had thus the entry wun,  
ll great slaughter again they have begun,  
ey saved none upon the *Sutheron* side,  
at weapons bare and harnessse in that tide,

men and bairns, the good they took them fro,  
ta gave them leave in the room land to go :

Priells als that was not in the field,  
aged men that might not weapons weild,  
ey flew none such, for *Wallace* charge it was,  
t made them free in largess for to passe.

Riches of gold they got in great plenty,  
Harness and horse that might them well supply  
With French folk plenish the town again,  
On the tenth day the field they took in plain,  
The river down into the land they sought,  
On Sutheron men full great mastry they wroughe  
Then when true men to the King told this tale  
Of French men he sembled a battel,  
Twenty thousand of true lieges of France,  
His brother them led was Duke of Orleans :  
Through Guyan land in rayed battel rode,  
To follow Wallace who made but little bode:  
For French supply to help them in their right,  
Near Burdeous ere they overtake him might,  
Good Wallace was there, and chosen hath a p[ro]p[erty]  
For some men told that Burdeous with great m[e]re  
Within short time thought battel for to give :  
But fra they wist that French folk would relief  
With great power for helping of Wallace,  
Other purpose they took into short space :  
In Picardie some message could they send,  
Of Wallace coming they have told to an end.  
Of Gloucester Captain of Calais was  
The hardy Earl, he made him for to pass  
In England soon, and thento London went,  
Of Wallace deeds he told in Parliament.  
Some plainly said, that Wallace brake the peace  
Wise men said, Nay, and prayed them for to ceas  
Lord Bewmonst laid, He took but for Scotland,  
And not for France, that shall you understand  
If your indentures speak of any mair,  
He hath done wrong, the sooth ye may declar.

ook up p. 3. v. 3.  
Woodstock answered, said, Ye have spoken well,  
contrare right that tale is every deal.  
yon be he that band for him and his,  
ay no man say, but he hath done amiss :  
ain, principally he band with us the crew,  
nd now again begins he malice new.  
er King, he said, if ever ye think to make  
n Scotland war on hand, now shall you take,  
hile he is out, or else it helps nought.  
Woodstock said, the whole Counsel hath wrought  
ower they raised in Scotland for to ride,  
y land and sea, they would no longer bide.  
heir land Host they rayed soon indeed,  
heir vanguard took the hardy Earl to lead,  
of Gloucester, that of war had great feil :  
Of Longcastel the Earl governed well  
the middle-ward, and to the sea they send  
it John Stewart, that well the North land kend.  
The Knight Wallang before the Host in rade,  
And such a way with evil Scottish-men made,  
Many Castles he gart soon yeelded be  
To Englishmen withouten more mellie.  
Ere the best wist that it was war in plain,  
Entred he was into Bathwel again.  
Sir John Stewart that came in by the sea,  
Saint Johnston soon got through a jeopardie  
Dundie they took, and put Scots-men to dead,  
In Fife from them was not kepted a stead.  
And all the South from Cheviot to the sea,  
Into the West there might no succour be.  
The worthy Lord that should have governed this,  
God hath him tane to everlasting bliss.

On his purpose at Guyen at the wear,  
 On Englishmen he had done meikle dear.  
 While good Guthrie had gotten his presence,  
 He hasted him fast, and made no residence.  
 He hath told him with Scotland how it stood.  
 Then Wallace said, These tydings are not good:  
 I haad example of times that is by worn,  
 Trews to bind with them that are mensworn:  
 But I as then could not think on such thing,  
 Because that we took peace with their false King  
 By their Chancellor the other peace was bound.  
 And that full sore our fore Elders hath found.  
 Under that trew they gart eighteen score die,  
 That noble were the best in our Countrie.  
 To the great God my vow now here I make,  
 Peace with that King I think never to take.  
 He shall repent that he this war began,  
 Thus moved he with many noble man,  
 Unto the King, and told him his intent.  
 To let him passe, the King would not consent,  
 While Wallace there made promise by his hand,  
 If ever again he thought to leave Scotland,  
 To come to him, his great Seal to him gave,  
 Of what Lordship that he liked to have.  
 Thus at the King an hasty leave took he,  
 No man with him he brought from that Countrey,  
 But his own men, and Sir Thomas the Knight,  
 In Flanders land they past with all their might,  
 Guthries barge at the Sluce could ly still:  
 To sea they went with a full eager will.  
 Both Forth and Tay they left, and passed by,  
 On the North Coast good Guthrie was their gu

Chap. I. of Sir William Wallace.

In Monroffe haven they brought him to the land,  
To true Scots it was a blyth tydand.  
Sir John Ramsay that worthy was and wight,  
From Ochter-house the way he choosed right,  
To meet Wallace with men of arms strong :  
For his coming they had thought wonder long.  
The true Ruthven came als withoutten bade,  
In Birnane wood he had his lodging made.  
Barclay, Bisset, to Wallace sembled fast,  
With three hundred to Ochter-house he past.

The end of the ninth Book.



## THE TENTH BOOK.

### CHAP. I.

How Wallace wan Saint Johnstoun;

**T**He latter day of August fell this case,  
For the rescue thus ordain'd good Wallace  
Of S. Johnstoun the Sutheron occupyed;  
First toward Tay they passed and espyed:  
Ere it was day under Kinnowl them laid.  
Out of the town, as Scots-men to him said,  
Their servants ished with carts, hay to lead;  
So it was sooth, and hapned in that stead.  
Then six there came, and brought but carts threes:  
When they of hay were leading busilie,  
Guthrie with ten in hands then hath them tane,  
Put all to death, of them he saved nane.  
Wallace in haste gret take their upmost weed,  
And such like men they wailed with good speed.

True men him took, and could to *Arran* pass,  
 His son *Walter* that but a child yet was.  
*Adam Wallace* that wist of no supplie,  
 To *Rauchly* went, and *Lindsay* of *Craigie*.  
 Good *Robert Boyd* in *Bute* made residence,  
 For hasty deceit, they took them to defence.  
 Sir *John the Graham* in *Dundaff* might not byde,  
 Succour he sought to the Forest of *Clyde*.  
 The Knight *Psewart* a Sheriffe made in *Fife*,  
 Sir *Aymars* brother, and gave for terme of life.  
 These lands all that *Wallange* had before,  
*Richard Lundie* had great dread through their  
 He liked not for to come to their peace. (shore  
 Therefore in *Fife* they would not let him cease,  
 To pass over *Tay* as then it might not be,  
 For *Englishmen* sore ruled that Countrie.  
 Out of the Land he stole away by night,  
 Eighteen with him that worthy were and wight;  
 And als his son that was of tender eild,  
 But after soon he could well weapons weild.  
 At *Striving* bridge ere that the watch was set,  
 There passed he the way withoutten let.  
 In *Dundaff* mure sir *John the Graham* he sought,  
 A woman him told as then before was wrought,  
 Unto a strength he went upon the morn,  
*Lanerk* was tane with young *Thomas of Thorn*:  
*Hay* and *Lundie* they might no longer remain,  
 By South *Tinto* to lodge they made in plain.  
 Sir *John the Graham* got wit that they were there,  
 To them he past withoutten procese mair.  
*Wallange* gart bring from *Caryle* carriage,  
 To stuff *Bothwell*, both good wine and vernage.

Laudie

andie and Graham got wit of that vittail,  
ght suddenly they made them to assaile :  
tie they were of noble Chevalry,  
ginst four score of English company.  
Squier then keepeid the carriage,  
Brankistnabit whole then was his heritage,  
andie and Graham met with the Squyer wight,  
Englishmen derly to death he dight :  
they were slain upon the Sutheron side,  
and five Scots, so boldly they abide :  
great good they wan, both gold and other gear,  
eir fual and horse, thus happened in this wear.  
nce they have seen well long they might not leſt  
to the land, therefore they thought it best  
seek some place in strenth that they might bide  
the Sutheron folk had plenish on each side :  
ndies lodge they left upon a night,  
to the Lennox they past the way full right,  
Earl Malcome that keeped that Countrey  
om Englishmen, through help of their supply,  
on and Lyle into the Bassabade,  
Englishmen so great maſtry had made.  
ut all the South they had into their hand :  
d Hew the Hay they ſent into England,  
other heirs, to prison at their will. (til,  
e Northland Lords ſaw more help come them  
Squier Guthrie amongst them ordained they,  
warn Wallace in all the haſte he may :  
of Aberbrothock he paſſed to the ſea,  
at the Sluce landed full ſoon hath he.  
Flanders land no reſidence he made,  
France he paſt: but Wallace well abade

On his purpose at Guyen at the wear,  
On Englishmen he had done meikle dear.  
While good Guthrie had gotten his presence,  
He hasted him fast, and made no residence.  
He hath told him with Scotland how it stood.  
Then Wallace said, These tydings are not good  
I had example of times that is by worn,  
Trews to bind with them that are mensworn:  
But I as then could not think on such thing.  
Because that we took peace with their false King  
By their Chancelor the other peace was bound  
And that full sore our fore Elders batch found.  
Under that crew they gart eighteen score die,  
That noble were the best in our Countrey.  
To the great God my vow now here I make,  
Peace with that King I think never to take.  
He shall repent that he this war began,  
Thus moved he with many noble man,  
Unto the King, and told him his intent.  
To let him passe, the King would not consent,  
While Wallace there made promise by his hand,  
If ever again he thought to leave Scotland,  
To come to him, his great Seal to him gave,  
Of what Lordship that he liked to have.  
Thus at the King an hasty leave took he,  
No man with him he brought from that Countrey  
But his own men, and Sir Thomas the Knight,  
In Flanders land they past with all their might  
Guthries barge at the Sluce could ly still:  
To sea they went with a full eager will.  
Both Forth and Tay they left, and passed by  
On the North Coast good Guthrie was their gy

In Manrosse baven they brought him to the land,  
So true Scots it was a blyth tydand.  
Sir John Ramsay that worthy was and wight,  
From Ochter-house the way he choosed right,  
To meet Wallace with men of arms strong :  
For his coming they had thought wonder long,  
The true Ruthwen came als withouten bade,  
In Birnane wood he had his lodging made.  
Barclay, Bisset, to Wallace sembled fast,  
With three hundred to Ochter-house he past.

The end of the ninth Book.



## THE TENTH BOOK.

### CHAP. I.

How Wallace wan Saint Johnstoun.

**T**He latter day of August fell this case,  
For the rescue thus ordain'd good Wallace  
Of S. Johnstoun the Sutheron occupied:  
First toward Tay they passed and espyed:  
Ere it was day under Kinnowl them laid.  
Out of the town, as Scots-men to him said,  
Their servants ished with carts, hay to lead;  
So it was sooth, and hapned in that stead.  
Then six there came, and brought but carts threes:  
When they of hay were leading busilie,  
Guthrie with ten in hands then hath them tane,  
Put all to death, of them he saved nane.  
Wallace in haste girt take their upmost weed,  
And such like men they waield with good speed.

Four were right good, Wallace himself took and L  
A ruslet cloak, and with good Ruthwen,  
Gutherie, Bisset, and als good yeomen two,  
In that each sute he gaithed them to go.  
Fifteen they took of men of arms wight,  
In each cart five they ordained out of sight,  
Full subtily they covered them with hay,  
Then to the town they went the gainest way.  
These carters had short swords of fine steele,  
Under their weed, then drove the carts forth well,  
Sir John Ramsay bode in the bushment still,  
When mister were, to help them with good will,  
These true carters past out withouten let,  
Out over the bridge, and entred at the gate!  
When they were in, their cloaks they cast them fra  
Good Wallace then the chief Porter could ta  
Upon the head while dead he hath him left,  
Then other two the life from them he refc.  
Guthrie and Bisset did right well in the town,  
And Ruthwen als dang of their fey men down.  
The armed men that in the carts were brought,  
Rose up, and well their devour duely wrought:  
Upon the gate they gart feil Sutherland die.  
Then Ramsay's spy hath seen them get entrie,  
The bushment broke both bridg, & port hath wun  
Into the town great strife there was begun.  
Twenty and one ere Ramsay came in plain,  
Within the town had fourty Sutherland slain.  
The Englishmen to array them were not gone,  
The Scots as then leasure let them have none:  
For good Ramsay with his men entred in,  
They saved none were known of Sutherland kin.

and Longoveil the worthy Knight sir Thomas,  
 loved well there, and many other place :  
 whinst his dñe few Englishmen might stand,  
 Wallace in him great faith and kindness fand.  
 The Sutheron part saw well the town was tint,  
 scarcely they fled, as fire doth from the flint.  
 Some fled, some fell into draw-dykes full deep,  
 some to the Kirk, their lives if they might keep.  
 Some fled to Tay, and in smal vessels yeed :  
 allie, some derly died, and drowned in that stead.  
 John Psewart at the west gate out past,  
 Methwen wood he sped him wonder fast.  
 hundred men the Kirk took for succour :  
 Wallace would no grace grant them that hour  
 bade slay all of cruel Sutheron kin,  
 them for to slay he thought it was no sin.  
 our hundred men without the town were dead,  
 even score on life scaped out of that stead.  
 wives and bairns they made them for to go,  
 with Wallace will he would slay none of tho :  
 ches they found that Englishmen brought new,  
 sh't the town with worthy Scots and true.  
 John Psewart left Methwen forest strong,  
 went to the Gask full feil Sutheron among:  
 and then in Fye, where Wallange Sheriff was,  
 made scurriours soon out throg the land to pass,  
 gathered men a stalwart company,  
 Ardochatan he drew them privily,  
 ordained them in ready bargin bown,  
 gain he thought to assail Saint Johnstown,  
 here Wallace lay, and would no longer rest :  
 ruled the town as then him liked best.

Sir John Ramsay great Captain ordained he,  
 Ruthwen Sheriff at one accord to be,  
 This charge he gave if men them warning made  
 To come to him withoutten more abade :  
 And so they did when tydings was them broug  
 With an hundred Wallace forth from them sough

## C H A P. II.

*The Battel of Black-Irn-side.*

**I**N Fyfe he past to visie that Countrie,  
 But wrong warned of Englishmen was he,  
 Sir John Stewart when they were passed by,  
 From the Ochel he sped him hastily,  
 Upon Wallace followed with all his might :  
 In Abernethy took lodging the first night :  
 Upon the morn with fifteen hundred men,  
 To Black-Irn-side, as his guides could him ken.  
 There Wallace was and might no message send,  
 To Saint Johnston, to make his journey kend :  
 For Englishmen that full subtill hath been,  
 Great watches warn'd that non should pass betw  
 Then Wallace said, This matter likes not me,  
 He called to him the Squyer good Guthrie,  
 And Bisset als that knew full well the land,  
 And asked at them what deed was best on hand  
 Message to make, our power for to get,  
 With feil Sutheron we will be unbeset.  
 And wicked Scots that knowes the Forest best,  
 They are the cause that we may get no rest.  
 I dread far more Wallace that is the guide,  
 Then all the rest that comes upon that side.  
 Then Guthrie said, might we get once over T  
 To Saint Johnston it were the gainest way,

To warn *Ramfay*, we would get succour soon :  
 Never sooth it is, that cannot well be done.  
 Adeight well I wot, vessel is leaved nane,  
 From the *Wood-haven* to the ferry called *Arrane*.  
 When *Wallace* said : the water awful is,  
 Foggy self can swim, I trow, and aisle no miss :  
 But curier use accordeth not for me,  
 And leave you here, yet I had rather die.  
 Through Gods grace we shal better eschew,  
 The strength is strong, and we were men anew.  
 Elchock park but fourty men were we,  
 Or seven hundred, and gart feil *Sutheron* die.  
 Escaped well in many unlikely place,  
 O shal we here through the help of Gods grace,  
 While we may last, we may this wood hold still :  
 Therefore each man be true of hardy will.  
 And that we do so nobly into deed,  
 If us be found after no lack to reed,  
 The right is ours, we should more ardent be,  
 Think to free this Land or else to die,  
 His wailed speech, with wit and hardiment,  
 Bade all the rest so cruel of intent :  
 Some bade take field, and give battel in plain,  
 Wallace said, no, these words are all in vain,  
 We will not leave that may be our vantage,  
 His wood to us is worth a whole years wage,  
 Of hewen timber in haste he gart them take,  
 Pyles of Oake and a great Barriers make,  
 At a fore-front into the Forrest side,  
 Bide a great strength, where they purposed to  
 Telled them fast to trees that growing was, (bide,  
 That they might well in from the Barriers passe,  
 And

And see their avail on either side about,  
Then come again, when they saw there was doubt  
By that this strength arrayed was at right,  
*The English Host* approached to their sight.  
Then *P'ewart* came, that way for to have wend  
That they were wont, his guids so him kend.  
At their entry they thought to have passage,  
But soon they found that made them great stour  
A thousand he led of men of armor strang, (page 10)  
With five hundred he gart *John Wallange* gang right  
Without the wood, that none should scape the hen  
*Wallace* with him had fourty archers thro, (fr. 10)  
*The rest* were spears full noble in a deed,  
On their enemies they bickert with good speed.  
A cruel counter was at the Birris seen.  
*The Scots* defence so sikker was and keen,  
*Sutheron* stood aw to enter them among,  
Feil to the ground they overthrew in that thron  
A rowm was left where part in front might fare  
Who entred in, agin yeid never mair.  
Fourty they flew that goneward would have past  
All disarrayed, the Host was all agast.  
One part of horse throgħ shot to death was brog  
Brake to a plain, the *Sutheron* to them sought.  
Then *P'ewart* said, Alace, how may this be?  
And do no harm, over great rebute have we.  
He called *Wallange*, and asked his counsel:  
Sheriff thou art, what may us best avail?  
But few they are that makes this great debate.  
*John Wallange* said, This is the best I wate,  
To cease thereof, and remain here beside,  
For they may not long in the Forest bide,

or fault of food they must in the Country,  
 when were more time to make on them melly :  
 are they be won on force into this strife,  
 til that ye lead shall erer losse their life.  
 when Pſewart said, This reed I will not take,  
 and Scots be warn'd, rescue soon will they make ;  
 if this despite a mends I think to have,  
 die therefore in number with the lave.  
 a range my self on foot will fare :  
 eight hundred he took the likliest that was there,  
 then bade the rest at the Barrers bide still,  
 (with John Wallange, to rule them at his will.  
 Wallange, he said, be foreward in this cale,  
 such a snare we could not get Wallace.  
 take or slay him, I promise by my life,  
 that King Edward shall make thee Earl of Fife,  
 tyon East part we think to enter in,  
 bade no more, might ye this barrers win :  
 they be closed graithly amongst us so,  
 but marvel be, they shall no further go.  
 assailie sore when ye wot we come near,  
 neicher side we shall hold them on stear.  
 bus Pſewart charged upon an awfull wife,  
 Wallace hath seen what hath been their devise,  
 good men he said, ye understand this deed :  
 orsooth, he said, they are meikle to dread.  
 on Pſewart is a worthy noble Knight,  
 forward in wars, right hardy, wise and wight ;  
 is assailie he ordains wonder sore,  
 is for to harm, mans wit can do no more,  
 pleasant it is a wise Chiftain to ga  
 o Chiftain like, it should great comfort mae,

To his own men, and they of worship be,  
Then for to see ten thousand cowards flee.  
Since we are set with enemies on each side,  
And here on force must in this forest bide :  
That all the rest of us abased be:

**A**ssay the first, for Gods sake, cruellie.

*Crawfurd* he left, and *Longoveil* the Knight,  
Fourty with them, to keep the barriers wight.  
With him sixty all worthy men in weed :

To meet *Psewart* with hardy will they yeed :  
A manner of dyke into the wood was made,  
Of thortour trees, boldy he there abade.

A down-with wall the *Sutheron* to them had,  
Soon sembled they with straiks sore and sad,  
Sharp spears then dushed on either side,

Through birnish bright made wounds deep & wide  
The vantage was the *Scots* them danted so,  
That no *English* durst from his fellow go,

To break array, or foremost enter in,  
Of Chritten blood to see it was great sin,  
For wrongous cause, and hath been many a day.

Feil *Englishmen* in the dyke dead they lay :  
Spears full soon all into splenders sprong,  
With sharp swords they hewed on in the throng

Blood bursted out through fine harness of mail.  
*John Wallange* als full sharply can assail

Upon *Crawfurd*, and the Knight *Longoveil*,  
With their power kepted the barriers well :

Mide good defence, by wit, manhood and might  
At the entry fel men to death they dight,

Thus all at once they failed either place :  
None that was there durst turn to the barres :

help Wallace, no man of his durst pass,  
 to rescue them, so fell the fighting was.  
 Neither hand they handled were so hote,  
 but do or die, no succour else they wot.  
 Wallace was sad into that stalwart stour,  
 Aubrey, Bisset, with men of great valour,  
 Richard Wallace that worthy was of hand,  
 Stewart marveled that contrar them might stand.  
 But ever so few might bide in battel place,  
 Aginst them, and matched face for face.  
 He thought himself to end that matter well,  
 It preassed in with a good sword of steel;  
 To the dyke a Scottish man he gart die,  
 Wallace therefore in heart had great pitie,  
 Friends to have he followed on him fast,  
 With Englishmen so thick betwixt them past,  
 But upon him a straik get could he nought.  
 Her worthy deifly to death he brought.  
 Tops he made through all the Chevalry,  
 The hardy Scots that wrought so worthily;  
 When Sutheron saw these good men were so drest,  
 Longer to bide they thought it not the best,  
 Our score were slain ere they wold leave that stead  
 And fifty als was in the barriers dead.  
 Trumpet blew, and from the wood can draw,  
 Wallace left off tht sight when that he saw,  
 Saylie more they thought it was no speed,  
 Without the wood to counsel fast they yeed.  
 The worthy Scots to rest them was right fain,  
 All hurts they had, but few of them were slain.  
 Wallace bade all of good comfort to be,  
 Thanked be God, the fairer part have we.

Yon Knight *Psewart* hath at great journies been  
So sore assay I have but seldom seen.  
I had lever on *Wallange* wroken be,  
Then any man that is in yon menzie:  
The *Scots* all into the barrers yeed,  
Stanched wounds that could full braithly bleed  
Some *Scots* men had bled full miekle blood,  
For fault of drink, and als wanting of Food,  
Some semblid fast that had feil hurts there.  
*Wallace* therefore sighed with heart full fair,  
An hat he hint, to get water is gone,  
Other refuge as then he wist of none.

A little strand as then hee found him by,  
Of clear water he brought them boundantly,  
And drank himself; then said with sober mude,  
The wine in *France* me thought not half so good  
Then of the day three quarters was over went,  
Sir *John Psewart* hath casten in his intent,  
To sailie more asthen he could not prieve,  
While on the morn that new men could reliev  
And keep them in while they for hunger sore,  
Come in his will or else to die therefore.

*Wallange*, he said, I charge thee for to bide,  
And keep them in while I to *Cowper* ride :  
Remain thou with five hundred at thy will,  
And I the morn with power shall come thee til  
*John Wallange* said, this charge I here forsake  
After this day all night I may not wake.

But trust ye well they will ish to the plain,  
Though ye bide als, or else die in the pain.  
*Psewart* bade bide, or underly the blame,  
I thee command in good King *Edwards* name,

here to God a vow I make beforne,  
 and they break out, to hang thee on the morn.  
 If this command John Wallange had great dread,  
 Stewart from them with nine score into deed,  
 ext hand the wood, and his good men of Fyfe,  
 the Scots wer blyth whē that they heard such strife,  
 Wallace drew near, his time when that he saw,  
 to the wood side, and could on Wallange caw.  
 The Kinght hath heght the morn to hang thee hie,  
 come in to us, I shal thy warrand be,  
 contrair him, and all King Edwards might :  
 Take we him quick, we shal him hang on hight :  
 good Lordship I shal thee give here East,  
 this each land that thy brother hath leif'.  
 Wallange was wise, full soon could understand,  
 by likeliness Wallace should win the Land:  
 And better him were upon the right to bide,  
 ben be in war upon the other side :  
 With short advisement to Wallace soon they soughe  
 when Pſewart cry'd, and said: That bees for noght  
 and als of kind thou art of heritage :  
 Edward, on thee is evil wared great wage :  
 Here I shal bide, my purpose to fulfil,  
 either to die, or have thee at my will.  
 At all his speech to pass they would not spare,  
 with full glad heart Wallace received him there.  
 That Ruthwen and Ramsay of renown,  
 a true Scot that past to Saint Johnſtoun,  
 hem warning made that Pſewart followed fast  
 on Wallace, then were they sore agast :  
 Out of the town ished in all their might,  
 Thre hundred that worthy were and wight

To Black-Irn-side assembled in that place,  
 As Wallange was gone in to good Wallace.  
 The Knight P'sewart hath well their coming seen  
 A fair plain field he choos'd them between :  
 Eleven hundred and four score then had he,  
 The Scottish-men were five hundred and fixtie :  
 There were but few a plain field for to take :  
 Out of the wood good Wallace can him make :  
 He got no wit of them that comming was,  
 More hardiment was from the strength to pass,  
 But when he heard Ruthwen and Ramsay cry,  
 Of Ochter-house blyth was his Chevalry :  
 Might they of gold have bought a Kings rent,  
 The good Wallace might not so well content.  
 Then to array they yeed on either side,  
 In cruel yre in battel bown to bide :  
 Worthier men then P'sewart sembl'd there,  
 In all his time Edward had never mair :  
 But P'sewart saw his number was far ma,  
 His power soon he gart divide in twa :  
 To fight in that cruse knightly he them kend,  
 In that journey either to win or end.  
 The worthy Scots that si st amongst them bade,  
 Full great slaughter on Englishmen they made  
 Into the wood before had proved so well,  
 That on the plain they sonziet not a deal.  
 In courage grew as they were new begun,  
 Short rest they had from rising of the sun.  
 By that Ramsay and good worthy Ruthwen,  
 Throughout the thickest of the preas is gone,  
 Slops they made amongst the Englishmen,  
 Dissevered them by twenty and by ten.

When spears were gon, with swords of mettal clear,  
 To Englishmen their coming fold full dear.  
 sed Wallace and his by wortchiness of hand,  
 Feit Sutheron blood gat light upon the land.  
 The two fields together reiled then,  
 e: Sir John Pſewart with many noble men,  
 To help their Lord, three hundred in a place,  
 About him stood, and did their busines,  
 Defending him with many awfull dint,  
 While all the outward of the field was tint.  
 Of commons, part into the forest fled,  
 Succour to seek, their men so bad them led.  
 Then Scots hath seen so many in a rout  
 With Pſewart stand, that guarded him about,  
 Upon the sides assailed wonder fair,  
 The poleist plaits with points pierced bair,  
 The Sutheron made defence full cruelly,  
 All occupyed was this noble Chevalry.  
 If John Ramsay would they had yeelden been.  
 Wallace said, Nay, it is a wrong ye mean.  
 Ransome to take, we cannot no v begin,  
 On such a wise this Land we may not win;  
 Non Knight of old our enemy hath been,  
 So fell to us of them I have not seen:  
 Now he shall die through help of Gods grace,  
 He came to pay his ransome in this place.  
 The Sutheron saw and wist plainly to die,  
 Relue was none, suppose that they would flee,  
 Freshly they fought as they had entred new.  
 Upon our side part worthy men they slew.  
 Then Pſewart said, Alace in wrong doing,  
 Our lives we lose for pleasure of our King.

That felon Knight doubted his life right noug  
 Amongst the *Scots* full hardily he wrought,  
*Bisset* he strake to death withouten mair:  
*Wallace*, press'd with his sword birnisht bare,  
 At *Psiwarts* hals he staled with great yre,  
 Through pesane stuff in sunder strake the swyre.  
 Dead to the ground he rush'd for all his might,  
 By *Wallace* hand thus ended that good Knight,  
 The remenant withouten mercy they slay:  
 For good *Bisset* the *Scots* was wonder wae.  
 In bands somme they sticked but remead,  
 No *Sutheron* past with life out of that stead.  
 Then to the wood for them that left the field,  
 A range they set, thus might they have no bield  
 Yeed none away was contrare our opinion,  
 Good *Ruthven* past again to Saint *Johnstoun*,  
 Sir *John Ramsay* to *Cowper Castle* rade.  
 That house he took, for defence none was made  
*Wallace*, *Crawfurd*, and with them good *Guthrie*  
*Richard Wallace* had long been in mellie.  
 And *Longoveil* into *Lundores* bode still,  
 Fasted they had too long against their will.  
*Wallange* they made their Stewart for to be,  
 Of meat and drinck they found abundantlie.  
 The power fled and durst no longer bide,  
 Thit was before upon the *Sutheron* side.  
 Upon the morn to Saint *Andrews* they past,  
 Out of the town that Bishop bowned fast.  
 The King of *England* had him thither send,  
 That cert at will he gave him in commend.  
 His Kings charge as then he durst not hold.  
 A wrongous Pope that tyrant might be cald.

few fled with him, and got away by sea,  
 for all Scotland. Wallace he would not see.  
 Of him as then he made but light record,  
 Gart restore him that was their righteous Lord.  
 The worthy Knight that into Cowper lay,  
 Gart spoilzie them upon the second day.  
 Then ordained men, at command of Wallace,  
 But more processe, for to cast down the place.  
 Lynders they gart soon pierce out through the wal,  
 Soon punsions ficed, unto the ground cast all.  
 Sir John Ramsay then to Carrail can fare,  
 Sutheron were fled, and left but walls bare :  
 After Pewart they durst not carry lang.  
 The Scots at large out through all Fife rang.  
 No Englishmen were left in that Country,  
 But in Lochlevin there bode one company :  
 Upon that Inch in small houses they light,  
 Castle was none but walled with water wight.  
 Beside Carrail sembled Wallace beforne,  
 His purpose was for to assay Kinghorn :  
 A Knight Musgrave then Captain in it was,  
 By short advice he purpos'd for to passe :  
 Rather he would by de challenge of the King,  
 Then with Wallace to reckon for such thing.  
 That house he took, and little tarry made,  
 Upon the morn withouten more abade,  
 Out over the mure where they the tryst had set,  
 Near Scotland well there lodging took but let.  
 After supper Wallace bade them go rest,  
 My self will wake, me think it may be best.

## CHAP. III.

## The winning of Lochlevin.

**A**S he comanded, but graithing they have done,  
Unto their sleep, Wallace the graithed him soon  
Past to *Lochlevin*, as it was near midnight,  
Eighteen with him that he had warned right:  
These men weined well he came to visie it,  
Fellows, he said, I do you well to wit,  
Consider well this place, and understand,  
That it may do full great skaith to *Scotland*:  
Out of the South, and power come them till,  
They may take in, to keep at their own will:  
Upon yon Inch right many men may be,  
And ished out, their time when that they see:  
To bide long here, we may not well for chance,  
Yon folk hath food, trust well at suffisance:  
Water from them forsooth cannot be set,  
Some other wile behoveth us to get.  
Ye shall remain here at this part all still,  
And I my self shall bring the boat you till.  
Therewith his weed in haste off casteth he,  
Upon yon side no watch-men can he see:  
Held up his shirt and took his sword so good,  
Bound on his neck, then lap into the flood,  
And over he swam, for letting had he nought.  
The boat he took, and to his men it brought,  
Arrayed them well, and would no longer bide,  
But passed in, and row'd to the other side:  
The Inch they took, with drawn swords in hand,  
They spared none that they before them fand.  
Strake doors up, and sticked men where they lay,  
Upon the *Sutheron* thus sadly sembled they.

bitty they flew that were into that place,  
To make defence the English had no space.  
ne, their women five were sent out of that stead,  
oon women nor bairns he never put to dead.  
the goods they took, as it had been their own.  
hen Wallace laid : Fellows, I make you known,  
he purveyance that was within these wanes,  
Ye will not fine, gaſ ſembl us all at anes :  
et warin *Ramſay*, and our good men each one,  
will remain till all the fluff be gone.

ent forth a man their horses for to keep,  
Drew up the boat, and then took beds to sleep,  
Wallace power near Scotland well which lay,  
before the sun they miſſed him away :  
ome mourning made, and marveiled at the caſe,  
*Ramſay* bade ceafe, and mourn not for *Wallace*,  
tis for good that he is from us went,  
hat ye ſhal ſee, and truſt for veriment :  
Mine head to wed, *Locklewin* he paſt to ſee,  
But in that place, no Englishmen found he,  
nto this land betwixt these waters left,  
Sydings of him full ſoon ye ſhal hear eft.  
As they about were talking on this wiſe,  
Message ſoon came, and charged them to riſe.  
My Lord, he ſaid, to dinner hath you call'd  
nto *Locklewin*, which is a likely hald.  
Ye ſhal fare well, therefore put off all ſorrow.  
They graithed them right early on the morrow,  
And thither paſt of *Wallace* well to wit :  
Then ſembled in a full blyth fellowship.  
They lodged there till eight days were at end,  
Of meat and drink they had enough to ſpend.

Tursed forth gearthat Sutheron had brought the  
 Gart burn the boat, to Saint Johnstoun they fare.  
 Bishop Sinkler that worthy was and wise,  
 To Wallace came, and told him his advise :  
 Thus he desired Wallace with him to ride,  
 And in Dunkeld sojourn'd that winter tide.  
 But he said : No, that hold I not the best,  
 And Scotland thus, in peace I cannot rest.  
 The Bishop said plainly : We may not wend,  
 Into the North for men I rede you send.  
 I grant, quoth he, and choosed a messenger,  
 The worthy Iop was with the Bishop there,  
 And Master Blair, while Wallace came they bad  
 with that good Lord, that noble chear them made.  
 Wallace sent Blair into his Priests weed,  
 To warn the West where friends had great dread,  
 How they should pass, or to good Wallace win.  
 The Englishmen that held them long in twain,  
 Adam Wallace and Lindsay that was wight,  
 Rauchly they left, and went away by night,  
 Throughout the land, to the Lennox they fare,  
 To Earl Malcome, that welcomed them full yair.  
 Master John Blair was glad of that semblie,  
 Good Graham was there, and Richard of Lundie,  
 Als Robert Boyd out of Bute to them sought.  
 Got they Wallace, of nothing then they rought.  
 But Englishmen betwixt them was so strang,  
 That they in plain might not well to him gang.  
 Iop passed on, for nothing could he let,  
 Great power then as there he might not get.  
 The Lord Cumming that Earl of Buchan was,  
 For old envy, he would let no man pass.

he at he might let, in good *Wallace* suppie,  
 the Earl *Patrick* at plain field kepted he :  
 poor men came, and proved all their might,  
 help *Wallace*, in fence of *Scotlands* right :  
 the good *Randal* in tender age was kend,  
 of good men out of *Murray* he lend.  
 past again, and came in presence soon,  
 fore *Wallace*, and told how he had done :  
 Muster *Blair* so good tydings him brought,  
 of *Cumming Wallace* full little rought :  
 Englishmen they hade full meikle dread,  
 Fife was tint, the worse they thought to speede :  
 Duke and Earl that time in *Scotland* led,  
 captains they made, in *England* then they sped :  
*Wallace* him bowned, when hethoghtime shold be  
 Saint *Johnstoun*, and took with him fiftie :  
 even of *Ireland*, and *Keirly* that was wight,  
 Englishmen they had holden the right.  
 watch-mens weed, and fended them right well,  
 good *Wallace* they were as true as steel :  
 follow him, those two thought never lang,  
 through the *Ochel* they made them for to gang :  
 on more power he carried not that tide,  
 keep the land the rest he gart abide :  
 Striveling bridge as then he would not pass,  
 strong power of Englishmen there was.

## C H A P. IV.

The winning of *Airth*.

He *Airth* Ferry they passed privately,  
 And busked them in a dorn stead thereby :  
 quel Captain in *Aire* dwelt that year,  
 England born, that heught *Thomlin of Wear*:

An hundred men were at his lodging still,  
To brook that land they did both power and will  
A Scottis<sup>h</sup> fisher which they had tane befor,  
Contrare his will, gart him be to them sworn :  
In their service they held him day and night.  
Before the sun, *VVallace* gart *Jop* him dight,  
And sent him forth the passage to espy,  
On the fisher they hapned suddenly,  
All him alone, but one boy that was there.  
*Jop* hint him soon, and for no fear wou'd spare,  
By the collar, and a knife out pulled he :  
For God's sake, this man asked mercie.  
*Jop* spiered soon : Of what Nation art thou ?  
A Scot, he said, but *Sutheron* gart me vow,  
In their service, against my will full fair,  
But for my life, that I remained there :  
To seek fishing, I came in this North side :  
Be ye a Scot, I would faire with you bide.  
Then he him brought in presence of *Wallace* :  
The Scots were blyth when they had seen this ca  
For with his boat they might well passed have,  
For ferry craft he thought not for to crave.  
Upon that side long space they tarried nought,  
To the south land with full glad hearts they sogh o sca  
Then brake the boat when they were landed therome  
Service of it *Sutheron* micht have no mair: (specit al  
Then through the moss they passed with good  
To the *Torwood*, that man with them they led.  
The widow ther brought tydings to *Wallace*,  
Of his true Eme that dwelt at *Dunnipace*,  
*Thomlin* of *Weir* in prison had him set,  
For more treasure then he before might get.

Wallace said: Dame, he shal well loosed be,  
 will he morn by noon, or mo therefore shal die.  
 : got them meat, and in quyet they hade,  
 : while it was night, then ready soon they made  
 toward *Airth hill* right suddenly they drew,  
 strength there was that well the fisher knew,  
 of draw-dykes, and full of water wan,  
 wisely thereof he watched them, this man  
 in the back-side he led them privatlie,  
 om the water, as wont to come was he :  
 ver a smal bridge good *Wallace* entred in,  
 to the hall himself thought to begin,  
 om the supper as they were bown to rise,  
 he salust them upon an awfal wise,  
 his men followed suddenly at anes,  
 awfy sorrow was raised in those wanes.  
 with shearing swords sharply about them dang,  
 all on the floor were felled them amang.  
 with *Thomlin of Weir*, *Wallace* himself hath met,  
 fellow straik sadly upon him set.  
 through head and swyre, all through the coast him  
 the worthy Scots fast sticke all the lave: (clave,  
 kept well the doors, & to the death them dighe,  
 ghe escape away the *Sutheron* had no might.  
 herome windows sought for to have broken out,  
 ee it all for nought, full fey was all the rout:  
 bout the fire gushid the blood so red,  
 d. in hundred men was slain into that stead.  
 hen *Wallace* sought where his Uncle might be,  
 a deep cave he was set dolefully,  
 where water stood, and he in yrons strang:  
 Wallace full soon this braffes up he dang,

Out of the dark brought him with strength at  
 But noyse he heard, of nothing else he wist :  
 So blyth before in world he had not been :  
 And therewith fighed when he had Wallace seen,  
 In ditches the dead bodies out they cast,  
 Graithed the place as then them liked best.  
 Made full good chear, and wise watches they set,  
 While near the day they sleeped without let.  
 When they had fight, spoiled the place in hy,  
 Found gairing gear, both gold and jewelry.  
 On all that day in quyet held them still :  
 When Sutheron came received them with good will,  
 In that labour the Scots were all full bane.  
 Sutheron came in, but none went out again.  
 Women and bairns put in prison and cave,  
 So they might make no warning to the lave.  
 Steven of Ireland, and Keirly that was wight,  
 Kept the port upon the second night.  
 Before the day the worthy Scots roie,  
 Tursed good gear, and to the Tormwood goes,  
 Remained there while night was come on hand,  
 Then bowned them in quyet through the land,  
 The widow soon, fra they were passed doubt,  
 A servant sent, and let the women out,  
 To pass from Airth, where that they liked best,  
 Now speak of them that went into the west.

## C H A P. V.

How Wallace burnt the Englishmen in Dumbarton  
**W**allace himself was sikker guide that night,  
 To Dumbarton the way he choosed right,  
 Ere it was day, for then the night was lang,  
 Unto the town full privately they gang :

ut little eikle of it *Englishmen* occupied :

Good Wallace soon through a dark gate him hyed,  
into the house which he was wont to ken,  
widow dwelt, which friend was to our men.

About the bed, on the back side was made  
dern window, was neither long nor braid :

here Wallace called, and soon fra she him knew,  
haste she rose, and privatly him drew  
a close barn, where they might keeped be :  
oth meat and drink she brought them in plentie :  
goodly gift to Wallace als she gave,

with hundred pounds and more out over the lave.

Six sons she had, were likely men and wight,  
an oath to him she gare them swear full right.  
In peace they dwelt, in trouble they had been,  
and tribute payed to *English Captains* keen.

Mr John Mentieth the Castle had in hand ;  
but some men said, there was a private band  
o Sutheron made, by means of that Knight,  
of their supply to be at all his might.

Whereof as now I will no processe make.

Wallace that day a short purpose can take.

When it was night he bade the widow passe,  
and mark the doors where Sutheron dwelling was ;  
Thereafter this he and his Chevaltie,  
braithed them well, and weapons took on hie.

Went to the gate where Sutheron were on sleep,  
great Ostellary our Scots took to keep.

An *English Captain* was sitting up so late,

While he and his with drinking were made hate,

Nine men was there with him of hie courage.

Some would have had good Wallace in that rage;

Some

Some would have bound Sir John the Graham  
through strength.

Some would have had good Boyd at swords length.

Some wished Lundie that scaped was in Fife:

Some wighter was nor Setoun then in strife.

When Wallace heard the Sutheron make such dinne,

He gart all byde, and him alone went in:

The lave remained to hear of their tydance,

He salust them with sturdy countenance:

Fellows, he said, since I came last from hame,

In travel I was in land of uncouth fame:

From south Ireland I came in this Countrie,

The new conquisht of Scotland for to see.

Part of your drink and some good wold I have,

The Captain then a shrewd answer him gave:

Thou seemest a Scot, likely to be a spy,

Thou mayest be one of Wallace company,

Contrare our King he is risen again,

The land of Fife he hath ridden in plain:

Thou shalt bide here, while we wot how it be;

Art thou of his, thou shalt be hanged hie.

Wallace thought then it was no time to stand,

His noble sword he gripped soon in hand,

Over-thort the face drove the Captain in teen,

Strake all away that grew above the een:

Another braithly on the breast he bore,

Both brain & bone the buredly blade throught shore

The rest rusht up, then Wallace in great ire,

The third he felled derly into the fire.

Steven of Ireland and Keirly in that throng,

Kepted no charge, but entred them among,

And other mo that to the door can preass:

while they him saw, ther could nothing them ceas.

thane Sutherons men fall soon were broght to dead:  
the Hostler bade them all good ale and bread.

ng Wallace said, No, while we have leasure mair,  
e: be our guide, thou shalt before us fare,  
d begin fire where that the Sutherons lies.

din the Hostler soon upon a hasty wise,  
nt fire in hand, and to a great house yeed,  
here Englishmen were into meikle dread:  
r they wist not while that the red flame rose,  
wood as beasts among the fire then goes,  
ith pains fell rushed full sorrowfully:  
ne lave without of our good Chevalry,  
t each house where the Hostler began,  
e: keped the doors, from them seaped no man.  
or all their might, thogh King Edward had sworr,  
ot none away that was of England born,  
it either burnt, or but rescue was slain,  
nd some through force driven to the fire again:  
ome Scots folk in service them amang,  
om any pain freely they let them gang.

three hundred men was to Dumbarton send,  
o keep the Land, as their Lord had them kend,  
kaithleste of them for ay was this Region.  
Wallace ere day made him out of the town,  
nto the cave of Dumbarton they yeed,  
nd all that day they sojourned but dread:  
oth meat and drink the Hostler gart be brought.  
hen night was come, in al the haste they mought  
oward Rosneth full earnestly they gang,  
or Englishmen was in that Castle strang:  
On the Garloch they purpose them to byde,  
etwixt the Kirk that near was there beside,

And to the Castle full privatly they draw,  
 Under a bray, and lodged them full law,  
 Beside the water where common use had they,  
 From Castle to the Kirk they past each day :  
 A marriage als was that day to begin,  
 All ished our, and left no man within,  
 That fence might make, but servants in that place,  
 Thus to that tryst they passed upon case.  
*Wallace* and his drew them full privily,  
 Near hand the place when they were passed by :  
 Within the hall, and thought to keep that stead,  
 From *Sutheron* men, or else therefore be dead.  
 Compleat was made the marriage into plain,  
 Unto *Rosneth* they passed home again :  
 Four score and mo was in that company,  
 Bat not arrayed as was our Chevalry :  
 To the Castle they went to passe but let,  
 The worthy *Scots* so hard upon them set,  
 Forty at once derly to death they bare,  
 The remanent affrayed was so fair,  
 Longer in field they had no might to byde,  
 But fiercely fled from them on either side.  
 The *Scots* there well hath the entry won,  
 And slew all such as the house found was in ;  
 Then on the flyers followed wonder fast,  
 No *Englishmen* with their life from them past.  
 The women soon they seized upon hand,  
 Kepted them close, for warning of the land :  
 And dead bodies all out of sight they cast,  
 Then at good ease they made them for to rest.  
 On their purveyance seven dayes lodged there,  
 At rude coast, to spend they would not spare.

When

When Sutheron came, they took them gladly in,  
 At out again, they let none of that kin,  
 Who tydings sent the Captain of that stead,  
 Their servitours the Scots put to dead,  
 Spoyled the place, and left no goods there :  
 Take walls down, and made the biggings bare.  
 When they had spilt al stonework that they moght,  
 Then kindled fire, and from Rosneth they sought :  
 When they had burnt all tree-work in that place,  
 Wallace gart free the women of his grace :  
 To do them harm his purpose never was :  
 Went to Falkland the worthy Scots can passe,  
 Where Earl Malcome was biding at defence,  
 Right blyth he was of Wallace good presence :  
 Then he found there a noble company,  
 John the Graham, and Richard of Lundy,  
 Adam Wallace that worthy was and wise,  
 Barclay and Boyd, with men of mickle pris :  
 At Christmas there, Wallace sojourned still.  
 Of his mother tidings was brought him till :  
 A time before she had left Ellerlie,  
 For Englishmen she durst not in it be :  
 From thence disguised she past in pilgrims weed.  
 Some girth to seek in Dumfermling she yeid,  
 Sadnesse she had, forsooth into that stead.  
 Mislead she was, God took her sp'rit to lead.  
 When Wallace heard that these tidings were true,  
 Then sadness sore on each side did persue :  
 Thank he took, because it is natural,  
 He loved God with likker heart and heal.  
 Better him thought that it was happened so,  
 Then Sutheron should her put to other wo.

He ordained *Jop*, and also Master *Blair*,  
 Thither they past and for no cost to spare,  
 But honourably put corps to sepulture :  
 At his command they served all their cure,  
 Doing thereto as death desired to have.  
 With sich intire the corps they put in grave :  
 Again they turned, and shewed of her end :  
 He thanked God, what grace that ever he send  
 He saw the world was full of fantasie,  
 Comfort he took, let all mourning go by :  
 His most delight was for to free *Scotland*.  
 Now will I tell what case then came on hand.

## C H A P. VI.

*How Sir William Dowglas wan the Castle of Si-  
 quhaire by a jeopardy, and how William Walla-  
 rescued him from the English-men, and p-  
 them out of that part.*

Sir William long of *Douglas* dail was Lord,  
 By his first wife, as right is to record :  
 Deceased then out of this worldly care,  
 Two sons he had with her that lived there,  
 Which likely was and able in courage,  
 To School was sent into their tender age :  
*James* and *Hew* so heght these brethren twa,  
 And after soon their Uncle could them ta :  
 Good *Robert Keith* had them from *Glasgow* towar  
 And over the sea to *France* hath made him bowd  
 At study then he set them in *Paris*,  
 With a Master that worthy was and wise :  
 The King *Edward* took their father the Knight  
 And held him still though he was never so wight.

While time he had assented to his will.  
 Marriage als they had ordained him till,  
 Ladie Ferres, of power and hie blood?  
 thereof came to his life tittle good :  
 Sons he got on this Lady but mair,  
 Edward will he took his leave to fare.  
 Scotland came, and brought his wife in peace,  
 Dowglas dwelt, forsooth this is no leest :  
 Edward trowed that he had stedfast been,  
 to their faith, but contrare soon was seen.  
 the Scots blood remained in Dowglas,  
 inst England, which proved in many place.  
 Sanquhair was a Castle fair and strong.  
 English Captain had done feil Scots wieng,  
 Alalibit dwelt, and Bedford he was call'd,  
 he held all west, from then to Dowglas hald,  
 he near of kin was Dowglas wife and he,  
 before he trowed in peace of him to be,  
 willim saw that Wallace rose in plain,  
 right likely to free Scotland again,  
 help him part, into his mind he cast,  
 in that life right long he could not last:  
 thought no charge to break upon England,  
 as through force that ever he made them band.  
 young man then that hardy was and bald,  
 with himself, and Thomas Dickson call'd :  
 friend, he said. I would prove at my might,  
 make a fray to false Bedford the Kinght,  
 Sanquhair dwels, and doth full great outrage.  
 Dickson said: My self in that voyage  
 for yon pass, with Anderson to speak,  
 friendship to me my cousin will not break.

He is the man that fire leads them till,  
 Through his help we our purpose will fulfil.  
 Sir *William* then in all the heste he might,  
 Thirty true men in that voyage he dight,  
 And told his wife to *Dumfreis* he would fare,  
 A cryst, he said, of *England* he had there.  
 Thus passed he where that no *Sutheron* wist,  
 With these thirty through wast land at their lise  
 While night came, then couched they full law,  
 Into a cleugh near at the water *Craw*.  
 To the *Sanquhair Dickson* alone he send,  
 And he soon made with *Anderson* this end:  
*Dickson* should take both his horse and his weed  
 By it was day, a draught of wood to lead:  
 Again he past, and told the good *Dowglas*,  
 Which drew him soon into a private place.  
*Anderson* told what stuff there was therein,  
 To *Thomas Dickson* that was right near of kin.  
 Fourty they are, all men of meikle vail,  
 Be they on foot, they will you sore assail,  
 If you happen the entry for to get,  
 On the right hand a stalwart axe is set,  
 Therewith you may defend thee in a throng:  
 Be *Dowglas* wise, he byde not from thee long.  
*Anderson* yeed to the bushment in hy,  
 Near the Castle he drew them privily,  
 Into a shaw, *Sutheron* mistrusted no light,  
 To the next wood with *Dickson* soon he sought  
 Graithed a draught on a broad slipping law,  
 Charged an horse, and to the town can draw.  
 Arrayed he was in *Andersons* weed,  
 And bade have in, the Porter came good speed.

his hour, he said, thou might have been away :  
My mous thou art, for it is scantly day.

The gate yeed up. *Dickson* yeed in but mair,  
A shortour band that all the draught up bare,  
He cutted it, the slip to ground could ga,  
Hammered the gate, steiking they might not ma.  
The Porter soon he hint into that strife,  
Wise through the head, and reft him of his life.

The axe he got that *Anderson* of spake,  
And beckning made therewith the bushmet brake.  
*Douglas* himself was foremost in the preas,  
Over the wood entred ere he would cease:  
Three watch-men was from the walls coming new  
Within the close the *Scots*-men them slew,  
Ne any scry was raised in that stour,  
*Douglas* had tane the gate of the great tower,

Run up the stair where that the Captain lay,  
On foot he got, and would have been away.  
Over late he was, *Douglas* strake up the door,  
Inwurd he found in the midst of the floor,  
With a fliff sword to death he hath him dight,  
His men follwed fast, that worthy were and wight.  
The men they slew that were within these wanes,  
Then in the close they sembled all at anes :

The house they took, and *Sutherland* put to dead,  
Got none but one with life out of that stead.

For that the gate so long unsteiked was,  
This spy he fled, and to *Dursdeir* can pass,  
Told that Captain that they had hapned so.

Another he gart into the *Ennoch* go :  
And *Tybers* mure was warned of this case,  
And *Lochmabane* all sembled to this place.

The Countrey als. when they heard of such th  
wold siedg Dowglas, & heght they should him me  
When Dowglas wist that none did from them but .  
To sailie him he crow'd that they would shape hom  
Dickson he sent upon a courser wight,  
To warn Wallace in all the haste he might  
In the Lennox. Wallace had tane the plain,  
With four hundred that were of meikle main:  
Kilsyth Castle he thought to visit it,  
That Ravindail held, but true men let him wi  
That he was out that time in Cumbernauld,  
Lord Cumine dwelt on tribute in that hald.  
When Wallace wist, he gart Earl Malcome ly,  
With two hundred the bushment near thereby, or th  
To keep the house, that none should to it fare, ten  
He took the rest in the wood side near there : f Er  
A scurriour set, to warn if he law ought, o e  
Soon Ravindail came, of them he had no thougith  
When he was coming the two bushments betw<sup>o</sup> Pi  
The scurriour warned these cruel men and keener  
When Earl Malcom had barred them frō the p<sup>o</sup> Val  
No Sutheron yeed with life, they did that gracend t  
Part Lennox men they left, the house to ta , ood  
Oaspoiling then they would not tarry ma. Et  
To siedge houses then Wallace would not byde dde  
Throughout the land in awfull wise they ride. ty  
Then Linlithgow they burnt into their gate, all  
wher Sutheron dwelt, they madetheir biggings bith  
The Peil they took, slew them that were therel<sup>ben</sup>  
Of Sutheron blood the Scots thought no sin:  
Then on the morn burnt Dalkeith in a gleid,  
Soon to a strenghto Newbattle they yeed:

that Lawder and Christel of Setoun,  
 him from the Bass & burnt Northberwick town  
 that Englishmen they should no succour get :  
 whom they over-took they slew withouten let.  
 meet Wallace, they past in all their might,  
 hundred men with them of arms bright :  
 blyth meeting that time was them between,  
 when Earl Malcome and Wallace hath them seen,  
 Thomas Dickson als met with good Wallace,  
 which granted soon for to rescue Dowglas.  
 Dickson, he said, wots thou of their multiplie ?  
 three thousand men their power may not be.  
 Earl Malcom said: Thogh they were thousands five  
 by this action, me think that we should strive.  
 when Hew the Hay that dwelt under trewage,  
 of Englishmen soon he gave over that wage :  
 o'e for to pay as then he liked nought :  
 though fifty men to Wallace forth he sought,  
 two Piebles fast, but no Sutheron them bade,  
 here at the Cross a plaincry they made :  
 Wallace commanded, who wold come to his peace  
 and byde thereat, reward should have but leese.  
 good Rutherford that ever true hath been,  
 Etrick wood against the Sutheron keen,  
 when he had, and done them meikle dear.  
 why he had of noble men of wear.  
 Wallace him welcomed that came in his supplies,  
 with lordly fare, and Chifeain-like was he.  
 when to array they went about the town,  
 their number was six hundred of renown,  
 birnes bright, all meu of meikle vail,  
 with glad hearts they passed through Cliddisdale

The siedge began, and to the *Sanguhair* set :  
But cydngs came, and made therein a let.

The *Sutheron* heard that *Wallace* was so near,  
Through hasty fray the Host was all on stear :  
No man was there would for another byde,  
Putpose they took in *England* for to ryde.

Their Chiftain said : Since their King had before  
From *Wallace* fled, their causes was the more.  
From south they sought, to bide it was great wris :  
*Douglas* as then was thus quite of their skait.  
In *Craufurd* mure by then was good *Wallace*,  
When men him told, that *Sutheron* upon cale,  
Were fled away, and durst not him abyde.

Three hundred then he choos'd with him to ryde,  
In light harness, and horse that they would wai :  
The Earl *Malcome* he bade bide with the stail,  
To follow them, a back guard for to be,  
To stuff the chase in all the haste bowned he :  
Through *Duri'sdeir* he took the gainest gate,  
Right fain he would with *Sutheron* make debate  
The plainest way above *Morton* they hold,  
Ryding the hight, if that the *Sutheron* would  
Them to persue, or turn to *Lochmabane*,  
But heed thereto the *Englishmen* took nane,  
Down right they held, graith guides could the  
About *Closburn* *Wallace* approached near; (le  
In yre he grew when they were in his sight;  
To them he sped, with will and all their migh,  
On an outpart the *Scots* set that tide,  
Seven score at ground they had soon at a side,  
The *Sutheron* saw that it had hapned so,  
Turn'd in again, some rescue for to sho :

hen they crowd best with good Wallace to stand  
 Earl Malcome came then right near at their hand,  
 The whole power took plain purpose to flee :  
 Who were at ground, Wallace gaſt let them be,  
 On the formost followed with all his might,  
 The Earl and his amongſt the rest they light,  
 And all to death that unhorsed were that tide ;  
 After the horse full freshly can they ride.

A hundred whole ere they past Dalswyntown,  
 Sutheron side to ground there was broght down,  
 Scores horse many began to tyre.

Oppose their ſelves were fierce as any fire.  
 The flyers left both wood, waters and hill,  
 Take the plain, ſpeedful they thought them till  
 Great battel away full fast they rode,  
 To the strengths they thought to make no bode.  
 For Lochmabane and Ochter-house they went,  
 Side Crochmad, where feil Sutheron they ſhent,  
 Eight many horse that ridden had ſo lang,  
 Travelled ſore, they might no farther gang,  
 John the Graham upon his feet was ſet,  
 When Wallace als lighted withouten let :

These two on foot amonſt their enemies yeed,  
 None but horse might from them pass for speed  
 Englishmen ſo cruelly they ſought,  
 From them over-took, again harmed us noughe.

Wallace came a part of power new,  
 Rested horse, that partly can perſue :  
 In Currie, with good men of great val,  
 Johnſtoun als that dwelt into Eskdale,  
 Kirkpatrick was in that company,  
 Haliday who ſembled ſturdily :

Where they entred the faylie was so fair,  
Dead to the ground feil Ayers down they bare.  
Seven score were whole of new come men indee  
The south party of them had meikle dread.

Wallace was horsed upon a courser wight,  
That good Currie had brought into his sight :  
To stuff the chase with the new Chevalry,  
Commanded Grahame, and his good men for the  
Together byde, and follow as they might.

Three Captains there full soon to death he digt  
The rested horse so wonder well him bare,  
Whom he over-took again rose never mair.

Raithly he rode, and wrought full many wound  
These three Captains he sticked in one stound,  
Of Durisdeir, Ennoch, and Tybers-mure.

Lord Cliffords Eme away to Carlile fure,  
The which before had keeped Lochmabane :  
No landed man scaped with him but ane :  
For Maxwell als out of Carlaverock drew,  
On the Sutheron the gainest way can sue :

Into the chale so wilfully they ryde,  
Few got away that came upon that side,  
Beside Cock-pool full feil fighting they fand,  
Some drowned were, some slain upon the land,  
Who scaped was, in England fled away.

Wallace returned, no prisoner took they.

In Carlaverock that night resting they made,  
Upon the morn to Dumfreis blythly rade :  
There Wallace cryed, who would come to his pe  
Against Sutheron, their malice for to cease :  
To true Scots he ordained warison,  
Who faulted had, he granted remission,

Dumfreis then he would no longer byde,  
the Sutheron fled off Scotland on each side,  
deevy sea and land, without longer abade.

Castles and towns Wallace Chifcains made,  
uled the Land, and put it in good rest,  
With true keepers, the which he trusted best.

The good Dowglas, of which I told you air,  
r the keeper he was from Drumlanrick to Aire :

because he had no Sutheron such thing wrought,  
dighis wife was wroth, but that she shewed nougnt,  
nder covert her malice held perfyte :

Serpent waits her time when she may byte :  
Dowglas oft she wrought full meikle care,  
nd, fthat as now I leave while furcher mair.

Sutheron men durst then no Castles hold,  
they left Scotland, before as I you told,

We one Morton, a Captain fierce and fell,  
ut held Dundie : but Wallace would not dwel,  
t chither past, and laid it round about.

Morton saw that he was in that doubt,  
asked leave with their lives for to go.

Wallace denied, and said : It bees not so,  
elsft Captain of England that here was,  
ve him leave whole with his men to pass.

You shalt forethink such mastry for to make,  
England shall of thee Example take :

men I weind from thine for to have worn,  
you shalt be hanged, suppose the King had sworn  
is peigart command, no Scots should to him speak :

affirmed the fiedge, and said : We shal us wreak  
Englishmen, as skil will of Dundie.

In geour he made their Constable for to be,

One Ballinger of England that was there,  
 Past out of Tay, and came to Quabitbie fair,  
 To London sent, and told of all this case,  
 To hang Morton so vowed had Wallace:  
 Before this time Edward with power yeed  
 To war on France, for then he had no dread:  
 Before he trowed Scotland to be his own.  
 When they him warned his men were overthrow  
 Again he took to England hastily,  
 And left his turn all sickled in folly.  
 Gascoign he claimed all into heritage,  
 He left it thus with all his hie barnage:  
 And Flanders als he thought to take in hand,  
 All these he left, and came to reave Scotland.  
 When that this King to England was come ham  
 Summonds they made, & charged Bruce by nam  
 And other mo that lived under his Crown,  
 Bishop and Barron, to come at his summon.  
 When Wallace twise throgh force had fred Scotla  
 This tyrant King took plainly upon hand:  
 For great desire he might no way take rest:  
 He thought to him to make it plain conquest,  
 In covetise he had reigned so long,  
 Chiftains he made that they should not go wron  
 Cuides they chose for strengths them to guy,  
 They thought no more to byde at jeopardy,  
 In plain battel that they might Wallace win,  
 He trow'd for war they would no more begin.  
 Leave I this King making his ordinance,  
 My purpose is to speak something of France,  
 The Englishmen then Guyen held in wear,  
 To French folk they did full meikle dear.

King and Counsel soon in their wits cast,  
 To get *VWallace*, them thought it wast the best:  
 For Guyen land the Englishmen had they,  
 Then shup they thus, in all the haste they may :  
 For they traisted if *Scotland* were hard stade,  
*Wallace* would come, as he them promise made.  
 The samine *Herauld* that in *Scotland* was,  
 They him commanded, and ordained him to pass  
 Into *Scotland* without longer delay,  
 Out of the *Sluce* as goodly as he may :  
 Ready he was, in ship he past on case,  
 In *Tayes* mouth, but bode the haven tais,  
 Where *VWallace* then was at the saylie still,  
 And he received the *Herauld* with good will :  
 Their writ he read, and said to them this wise:  
 An answer soon he could them not devise.  
 To honest *Innes* the *Herauld* soon he send,  
 On *Wallace* cost, right boldly for to spend,  
 While time he saw how other matters stood,  
 Then answer he should have withoutten dread.  
 The wit of *France* thought *Wallace* to commend,  
 Into *Scotland* with this *Herauld* they send,  
 Praise of his deed, and the description,  
 Of him tane there, by men of discretion,  
 Clerks, Knights, and *Heraulds* that him saw :  
 But I hereof cannot rehearse it aw.  
*Wallace* stature, of greatness and of hight,  
 Was judged thus by discretion of sight,  
 That saw him both on chevel and on weed :  
 Nine quarters large of hight he was indeed,  
 Third part that length in shoulders broad was he,  
 Right seemly strong, and lusty for to see ;

In limbs great, with stalwart pass and sound :  
His brands hard, with arms long and round ;  
His hands made right like to a palmear,  
Of manlike make, with nails long and clear :  
Proportioned fair and long was his visage :  
Right sad of speech, and able of courage ;  
Both breast high, with sturdy craig and great ;  
His lips round, his nose square and neat ;  
Burning brown hair on browes and bries light ;  
Clear asper eyes, like diamonds fall bright,  
Under his chin, on his left side was seen,  
By hurt, a wan ; his colour was sanguine.  
Wounds he had in many diverse place ;  
But fair and whole well keeped was his face ;  
Of riches als he keeped no proper thing.  
*Gave that he wan, like Alexander the King,*  
*In time of peace meek as a minde should be,*  
*When war approached, the right Hector was he,*  
*To Scots-men right good credence he gave,*  
*But known enemies they could not him deceive.*  
*These properties were judged into France,*  
*Of him to be a goodly remembrance.*  
Master John Blair this pattern could receive,  
In Wallacc Book he brieved with the lave :  
But he thereof as then took little heed,  
His laborous minde was all of other deed.  
At Dundie fiedge thus earnest as he lay,  
Tydings to him Jop brought upon a day,  
How King Edward with likely men of vail,  
An hundred thousand came for to assaile,  
And Scots ground they had tane upon case.  
Into some part it grieved good Wallace :

He made Scrimgeor at his house for to ly,  
 With eight thousand, and charged them for thy,  
 That none should scape with life out of that stead;  
 That Sutheron were, but put them all to dead.  
 Scrimgeor granted right faithfully to byde.

With two thousand Wallace could from him ryder  
 To Saint Johnstoun three dayes graithed he there,  
 With sad advice towards the South can fare,  
 For King Edward that time ordained had.

Ten thousand whole to passe that was full glad :  
 With young Woodstock, a Lord of meikle might,  
 At Striviling Bridge he ordained them full right;  
 And there to byde, the entry for to weir,  
 Of Wallace then he crowed to have no deir.

Right royally upon a good array,  
 Then leave they took, and past out but delay.

To Striviling came, and there would not abide,  
 To see the North beyond Forth can they ride.

Such new courage fell into his intent.

Which made the Sutheron full sore for to repent.

The end of the Tenth Book.



## THE ELEVENTH BOOK.

### C H A P. I.

*The Battel of Fawkirk.*

**T**His Woodstock rode into the North good speed,

**T**Of Scots as then they had but little dread;  
 For well they crowed for to rescue Dundee,  
 Their ships came to Tay in by the sea.

His guides said, that they should lead him by  
 Saint Johnstoun where passage lay plainly.  
 The high they took, and looked them about,  
 So were they ware of *VVallace* and his rout :  
 Then in some part he remorded his thought,  
 The Kings command because he keeped nougat  
 But when he saw they were fewer nor he,  
 He wold them byde, and either do or die.  
 Sir *John Ramsay* formost his power saw :  
 Said : Yon are they that ye see hither draw,  
 Either *Sutheron* that come so cruelly,  
 Or Earl *Malcome* to seek you for supply.  
 Then *Wallace* smiled, and said : English they are  
 Ye may them know right wel where that they fane  
 On Sheriff-mure *Wallace* the field hath tane,  
 With eight thousand of worthy men in wane.  
 The *Sutheron* were right doughty into deed,  
 Together strake well stufed in steel weed :  
 Then spears soon all into splenders sprent,  
 The hardy *Scots* out through the *Sutheron* went;  
 In sayed battel seven thousand down they bare,  
 Dead on the bent, recovered never mair.  
 Right feil fighting with weapons grounden keen,  
 Blood then from birnes was blushed on the gree  
 The stalwart stour right fellon was and strang,  
 The worthy *Scots* so derly on them dang,  
 That all was dead within a little stound :  
 None from that place had power for to found.  
 Young *Woodstock* hath both life and Host forlorn,  
 The *Scots* spoiled all good gear them beforne.  
 What them thought best, of fine harness they wair  
 Both gold and good, and horse that might avail.

Striviling bridge without resting they rade,  
 mo should come, Wallace this ordinance made  
 over the bridge, Wallace gart wrights call,  
 with crafts-men undid the passage all:  
 en these same folk he sent to the Dripfurz,  
 set the ground with strong stakes and burde,  
 th nine or ten syles he cast the gate before,  
 along the shald made it as deep as shore.  
 en Wallace said: We shal on one side be,  
 n King and I, but if he southward flee:  
 sent Lawder which had in hand the Bass,  
 along the coast, where any vessel was,  
 d men with him that busily could look,  
 each boat a boord or two they took:  
 ips they burnt of strangers that were there.  
 own and he to Wallace thus can fare;  
 Striviling ly upon his purpose still,  
 r Englishmen to see what way they will.  
 ne Earl Malcome Striviling in keeping had.  
 him came with men of arms sad,  
 three hundred whole that likker was and true,  
 of Lennox folk, their power to renew.  
 John the Graham from Dundaff likkerly,  
 Wallace came with a good Chevalry,  
 ydings him brought that Sutheron came at hand  
 Torphichine King Edward was lodge and,  
 destroyng the place of purveyance was there;  
 unt Johns good as then they woul l not spare.  
 Stewart of Bute came unto Wallace there,  
 With him he had twelve hundred men and mair  
 The Cumming then was past in Cumbernauld.  
 upon the morn bowned the Stewart bald,

Soon to array with men of arms bright :  
 Twenty thousand then sembled in their sight.  
 The Lord Stewart and Cumming forth they ride  
 To the Fawkirk, and thought there to abide.  
 Wallace and his then to array they yeed,  
 With ten thousand of worthy men indeed :  
 Who could behold his awful Lordly vult,  
 So well beseen, so forward, stern and stout,  
 So good Chiftain as with so few they been,  
 Without a King was never in Scotland seen.  
 Wallace himself and Earl Malcome the Lord,  
 Sir John the Graham, and Ramsay at record,  
 Setoun, Lawder, and Boyd that was full wight ;  
 Adam Wallace was to that journey dight ;  
 And many other that proved will in preals,  
 Their names all I may not here rehearse.  
 Sutheron or then out of Torphichine fure,  
 Their passage made into Slamanane mure :  
 Into a plain set tents and pavilions,  
 South the Fawkirk a little above the town,  
 Good Jop himself thus judged by his sight,  
 In whole number an hundred thousand right.  
 Of Wallace coming the Scots such comfort took,  
 When they him saw, all dreadour they forsook ;  
 For of envy was few there that it wist,  
 Treasonable folk their matter works at list ;  
 Poyson since then at the Fawkirk is call'd,  
 Through great treason, and corruption of ald.  
 For Cummings had envie of good Wallace,  
 For Earl Patrick, as hapned upon case :  
 Countess of March, was Cummings sister dear,  
 Under colour he wrought on this manner,

to the Host had ordained *VWallace* dead,  
and made *Stewart* to fall with him at plead.  
that Lord, he said : That *Wallace* had no right  
power to lead, and be present in fight :  
he bade him take the vanguard for the gy ;  
wilt he well that he should strive for thy.  
Lord *Stewart* asked of *Wallace* his counsel,  
said, Sir, ye know what may us best avail :  
an awful King is fellow for to byde.

right unabased *Wallace* answered that tyde :  
nd I have seen twise mo into Scotland,

With yon same King when Scots-men took on hand  
With fewer men then now hither is sought,  
his Realm against, and to good purpose brought,  
r, well fight, for we have men enew,  
s for a day, so that we all be true.

The *Stewart* said : The vanguard we should have,  
*Wallace* answered, and said : So God me save,  
that shal ye not, so long as I may reign,  
nor no man else, except my righteous King :  
she will come, and take on him the Crown,  
at his command I shall be ready bown.

through Gods grace I rescued Scotland twise,  
were over mad to tine it in such wise,  
so tine for boast that I have governed lang,  
thus halfin wrath from-ward him can he gang,  
*Stewart* therewith all bowned into bail.

*Wallace*, he said, by thee I tell a tale.  
Siy forth, quoth he, of the fairest ye can.  
Unhappily his tale thus he began.

*Wallace*, he said, thou takes this meikle cure,  
So fared it by working of nature,

How an Howlat complained of his fethrem,  
When Dame Nature took of each bird but blam  
A fair feather, and to the Howlat gave,  
Then he through pride rebuted all the lave :  
Wherfore shouldest thou thy senyie shew so hie,  
Thou thinks none here that should thy fellow beight  
This makes it, thou art clad with our men :  
Had we our own, thine were but few to ken.  
At these words good Wallace burnt as fire,  
Over hastily he answered him in ire :  
Thou lied, he said, the sooth full oft hath been,  
There have I bidden, where thou durst not be seen  
Contrare thine enemies, no more for Scotland's righ  
Nor dare the Howlat when that the day is light  
That tale full near thou hast told by thy sell :  
To thy desire thou shalt not me compell :  
Cumming it is harsh given thee this counsel,  
Wilt God ye shall of your first purpose fail :  
That false traitor that I from danger broughte,  
Is wonder like to bring this Realm to nought :  
For thine oggart either to do or die,  
To prisone fled, or cowardly to flee :  
Rescue of me thou shalt get none this day,  
Therewith he turned, and from them rode his way  
Ten thousand men away with Wallace rode,  
None better was in all the world so broad,  
As such men was living upon life.  
Alace, great harm fell Scotland for that strise :  
Past to the wood from the Fawkirk by east :  
He would not bide for command nor request,  
For charge of none, but it had been the King,  
That might that time bring him from his steling.

the other Scots saw their destruction,  
discomfort to leave the field was bowne;  
that these men was native to Stewart,  
ncipal in Bute, took hardiment in heart.

Lord Stewart was at Cumming grieved there,  
bought and he lived, he should repent it fair.

The great trespass that he through misknowledge  
had gart him make to Wallace in that place.

In their debate it was a great pitie,

That Englishmen then might no blyther be,  
listed so fast in battel to the field,

emity thousand that well could weapons wield.

The Earl Hartford was chosen their Chiftain,

The good Stewart to that array is gane,

The field he took as true and worthy Knight;

The Englishmen came on with full great might,

Their fell meeting was awfull for to see,

that counter they gart feil Sutherland die.

Then spears were split, hint out with swords soon,  
neither side full doughty deeds were done.

All on the ground was felled in that place,

Stewart and his can on their enemies race.

Blood bursted out through mailzie birniste bright,

Aventy thousand with dreadfull weapons dight,

To Sutherland men derly to death they ding,

The remanent again fled to the King.

A thousand then after the dead eschewed,

With that Chiftain unto the Host relieved,

Gain to ray the hardy Stewart yeid.

Then Wallace law that worthy noble deed,

Hold up his hands with humble prayer prest;

God he said, give you Lord grace to last,

And power have his worship to attend,  
 To win these folk, and take the whole commen  
 Great harm ic were that he should be overset,  
 With new power they then to him rebet.  
 By that the *Bruce* an awfull Battel rayed,  
 The Bishop *Beik* that oft hath been assayed,  
 Fourty thousand upon the *Scots* to fare,  
 With full effear they raised up right there,  
 The *Bruces* banner with gold and goules clear.  
 When *Wallace* saw the battels approached near,  
 The right Lyon against his own Kinrike :  
 Alace, he said, the world is contrare like.  
 This Land should be yon tyrants heritage,  
 That cometh thus to stroy his own barnage :  
 So I were free of it that I said air,  
 I would forswear *Scotland* for evermair :  
 Contrare *Bruce* I should rescue them now,  
 Or die therefore, to God I make a vow.  
 The great debate in *Wallace* wit can waid,  
 Betwixt kindnesse and wilfull vow was made.  
 Kindnesse bade him rescue them from their fo.  
 Then will said, Nay, why fool, wilt thou do so?  
 Thou hast no wit with right thy self to lead :  
 Should thou help him that wold put thee to des.  
 Kindnesse said, yet they are good *Scots* men.  
 The will said, wit the verity thou may ken,  
 Had they been good, all in one we had been,  
 By reason here the contrare well is seen,  
 For they us hate more then the Sutheron lied.  
 Kindnesse said, Nay, that shew they not indeed  
 Though one of them be false into their saw,  
 Because of him thou shouldst not lose them aw.

They have done well into yon felon stour,  
 And rescue them now, and take the high honour.  
 Well said, they would have refst from me my life,  
 And made for them in many a felon strife.  
 Indnesse said, help, their power is but nought,  
 Then wreak on him that all the malice wrought,  
 Well said, this day they shall not holpen be :  
 But I have said, shall ay be said for me :  
 They are but dead, God grant them of his blisse :  
 Many long since hath done great harm and misse.  
 Wallace therewith turned in ire and teen,  
 Tears for bail burst out from both his een.  
 John the Graham, and many other wight,  
 Weeped for wo for sorrow of that Knight.  
 When Bruses battel upon the Scots strake,  
 Their cruel coming made cowards for to quake.  
 Lord Cumming fled in Cumbernald away :  
 About the Scots the Suheron lapped they.  
 The men of Bute before their Lord they stood,  
 Defending him, when that feil streams of blood  
 Were them about in floats where they yeed.  
 Dashed in blood was Bruses sword and weed,  
 Through feil slaughter of feil men of his own,  
 Soon to the death the Scots were overthrown,  
 When flew the Lord, for he would not be tane.  
 When Wallace saw that their good men were gane,  
 Lords, he said, what now is your counsel ?  
 Two choifes there are, I rede the best ye wail,  
 Under the King his Host abandounand,  
 With Bruce and Besk in yon battel to stand,  
 On King in war right wise and fell hath been,  
 Their Captains als full cruel are and keen,

Better of hand is not living, I wish,  
In tyranny, ye trow me well of this,  
Nor *Bruce* and *Beik*, to what side they be set?  
We have a chiose which is full hard but let:  
And we turn Eist for strength in *Lowthian land*,  
They stuf a chase right hard I understand :  
Take we the mure, yon King is us before,  
There is but this withoutten words more,  
To the *Torwood*, for our succour is there :  
Through *Bruces Host*, forsooth first must we fare,  
Amongst us now there needeth no debate,  
Yon men are dead, we need not strive for state.  
They all consented to work right as he will :  
What him thought best, they granted to fulfill.  
Good *Wallace* then that stoutly could them ride  
Before them rode into his armour clear,  
Ruled their spears all in one number round,  
And we grace have for to pass through them sound,  
And few be lost; to our strength will we ride,  
Want we many, in faith we shall abide.  
With their armed horse fast on the Host they ride,  
The rierd then rose when spears in sunder glade,  
Dushed in drosse dunted with spears dint,  
From forged steel the fire flew forth but stint :  
The fellow throng when horie and men renewed,  
Up drove the dust where they their piths proved  
The other Host might not their deeds see,  
The stour that rose, while they disperred be.  
The worthy *Scots* eight thousand down they bare,  
Few fel on ground that good *Wallace* broght there  
The King cryed, Horse upon them for to ride :  
But this wise Lord gave him counsel to bide.

The Earl of York said, Sir, ye work amisse,  
To break array, yon men quite through them is :  
They ken the Land, and will to strengths draw,  
Like we the plain we are in peril aw.

And the King conceived that his counsel was right,  
Led the Host, and bade still in their sight.

The Bruce and Beik might return their battel,  
The Scots were through, and had a great avail.  
Wallace commanded the Host should passe away  
To the Terwood, in all the haste they may :  
Himself and Graham, and Lawder turned in,  
Betwixt battels, prye and proves to win,  
And with them bode in that place hundred three  
Of Westland men used in jeopardy,  
Upon wight horse, that right warly could ride,  
Slop they made where they set on a side :  
Spears they had but swords of tempered steel,  
Herewith in stour they let their enemies feel,  
Now they full oft had proved been in preasse,  
Of Englishmen they made feill to decease.

The Bruce thereof might well perceiving have,  
Three hundred there were graithed to their grave  
The hardy Bruce an Host abandone it,  
Thirty thousand he ruled by force and wit,  
Upon the Scots, his men for to rescue,  
Arrived they were with good spears anew.

And Bishop Beik a stuff to him to be,  
When good Wallace their ordinance can see,  
Place, he said, yon man hath meikle might,  
And over good will to undo his own right.  
He bade his men toward the Host to ride,  
Them for to save he would behinde them bide,

Meikle

Meikle he trowed in God, and his own deed,  
 To save his men into his doughty weed :  
 Upon himself meikle travel he taes,  
 The great battel compleat upon him gaes :  
 In the fore-front turned he full oft,  
 Whom ever he hit, their saughning was unsoft ;  
 That day in world known was not his maik,  
 A Sutheron man he flew ay at one straik.  
 But his own strength might not against them b  
 Toward his Host behoved him to flee.  
 The Bruce him hurt at his returning there,  
 Under the haunch, a deep wound and fair,  
 Blood bursted out braithly a spears length.  
 From the great Host he fled towards his streng  
 Such a flyer before was never seen,  
 Nought as Gaderis of Gaudiffer the teen,  
 When Alexander rescued the fourreours,  
 Might not to him be compared in those hours.  
 The feil turning of fourreours he made,  
 How boldly as before the Host he bade.  
 Nor how good Graham with cruel hardiment,  
 Nor how Lawder amongst his enemies went :  
 How they alone into the stour then stood,  
 While Wallace was in stauching of his blood.  
 By then he had stemmed full well his wound,  
 With three hundred unto the field can found,  
 To rescue Graham and Lawder that were wight,  
 But Bishop Brink came on with strength and sli  
 The worthy Scots retired far aback,  
 Seven aiker broad, unto their own great wrake ;  
 Yet were those two delivered there full weel,  
 By his own hand, and a good sword of steel.

awful Bruce amongst them with great main,  
the rescue three Scots-men hath he slain :

om he hit right ay at one straik was dead :  
llace preassed in therefore to set remead,  
tha good spear Bruce was served but bade,  
th great envy to Wallace fast he rade,  
d he to him affonzier not for thy.

Bruce him mist, as Wallace passed by,  
wartz he strake with his sharp grouden glave,  
ear and horse neck he all in sunder drove.

Bruce was at ground ere Wallace turned about,  
e great battel of Sutheron stern and stout,  
ey horsed Bruce with men of great valour :  
ng Wallace alone was in that stalwart stour.

Graham pressed in and strake an English Knight,  
ore the Bruce upon the basnet right.  
ut frivole stuff, and all his other weed,  
th bone and brain the noblesword through yeed  
e Knight was dead, good Graham returned right  
ubtil Knight thereat had great despight,  
llowed at wait, and hath perceived well,  
ahams birny too narrow was some deal  
neath the waste, that close it might not be,  
n the fillet full sternly then strake he,  
erced the back, in the bowels him bare,  
ith a sharp spear, that he might live na mare.

Graham turned ther and smote the Knight in teen  
ghrough the visart a little beneath the een :  
ead of that dint, to ground he rushed down,  
John the Graham swound on his arsoun,  
he overcame to passe to his party,  
il Sutheron men that were on foot him by,

Sticked.

Sticked his horse that he no further yeed :  
 Graham yeelds to God his good sprit & his d  
 when Wallace saw this good knight to death bro  
 The piteous pain so sore thirled his thought,  
 All out of kind altered his courage,  
 His wit in war was then but a wood rage.  
 The horse him bare in field where so him list,  
 For of himself as then he little wist.  
 Like a wood beast that was from reason rent,  
 As witless wight into the Host he went,  
 Dinging on hard, what Sutheron right he hit,  
 Straight upon horse again might never sit.  
 Into that rage full feil folk he dung down,  
 All him about was red a full great rowm.  
 When Bruce perceivd with Wallace it was sa,  
 He then charged him long spears for to ta,  
 And slay his horse, so he could not escape.  
 Feil Sutheron then to Wallace can them shap  
 Pierced his horse with spears in either side,  
 Wounds they made that were both deep & wi  
 Of shafts, part Wallace in sunder share,  
 But feil heads into his horse left there.  
 Some wit again to Wallace can redown,  
 In his own mind, so ruled him reasoun :  
 So for to die, he thought no vassalage.  
 Then for to flee he took into a rage,  
 Spurred the horse, and ran in a rardown  
 To his own folk were byding on Carroun.  
 The sea was in, they stopped and still stood :  
 On loud he cryed, and bade them take the flood  
 Together byde, ye may not loose a man.  
 At his command they took the water than.

returned the entry for to keep,  
While all the Host were passed over the deep :  
Then followed fast, and dread his horse should fail,  
Himself was clad in a heavy plate of mail.  
Though he could swim, he trow'd he might not well  
The clear water cooled the horse some deal.  
But over the flood he bare him to the land,  
Then fell down dead, and might no longer stand;  
Fairly full soon a courser to him brought,  
Then up he lap, amongst the Host he sought :  
Abraham was away, and other fifteen wight,  
On Magdalen day these folk to death were dight  
Ninety thousand of Englishmen for true,  
The worthy Scots upon that day they flew :  
First by Stewart, and then by wight Wallace,  
For all his price King Edward rewed that case.  
In the Torwood he bade the Host go ride,  
Fairly and he passed on Carron side,  
Holding over upon the south party.  
Bruce formost came, and could on Wallace cry :  
What ? art thou there ? A man, Wallace can say.  
The Bruce answered : that hast thou proved this  
To ride, he said, thou needest not to flee. (day)  
Wallace answered : I eschewed not for thee :  
But that thy power hath near thine own undone,  
Mends hereof, wil God, we shal have soon.  
Language of thee, the Bruce saith, I desyre.  
Fly forth, quoth he, thou mayest for little hyre :  
Byde from thine Host, & gar them byde with Bick :  
I would fain hear what thou likest to speak.  
The Host bode still, the Bruce passed them fra,  
No man with him, but one Scot that height Rae.

When that the *Bruce* out of their hearing were at G  
 He turned in hy, and this question can speare : to k  
 Why workest thou thus, & might in good peace migh  
 Then *Wallace* said : But in default of thee : curie  
 Through thy falsehood thine own wit is miskene  
 I claim to right, but would this Land defend, ou r  
 That thou undoest through thy false cruel deed now t  
 Thou hast taint two that were with far more me any f  
 Upon this day, with a good King to found, en f  
 Nor five millions of finest gold so round, gans  
 That ever were wrought in work or coyn so brighten le  
 I trow in world be not a better Knight, and sa  
 Then was good *Graham*, of truth and hardiment his d  
 Tears therewith from *Wallace* eyes down went. gainst  
*Bruce* said : Far more on this day we have lost en  
*Wallace* answered : Alace, they were ill cost, strong  
 Throgh thy treason sholdst be our righteous king en  
 That wilfully destroyest thine own off-spring. and al  
 The *Bruce* answered : Wilt thou do my devise ? to t  
*Wallace* said : No, thou livest in such wise, art die  
 Thou wouldest me make at King *Edwards* will hand  
 Yet I had rather to morn be hanged hie. ple  
 But wilt thou do as I shal counsel give, Walla  
 Then as a Lord thou might at liking live, You  
 At thine own will in *Scotland* for to reign, en  
 To be in peace, and hold of *Edward* King. T  
 Of that false King I think never to take, Walla  
 But contrare him with all my power to make : were  
 I claim nothing as by tittle of right, ( might to  
 Though I might crave, since GOD hath lent me ve  
 From thee thy crown of this Region to wear ; of t  
 But I shal not such charge upon me bear. Dr

ver eat God knowes best what wars I took in hand,  
to keep free that which thou doest gain-stand  
ace might be said of thee long time beforne,  
curst time thou wast for Scotland born.

ken comest thou not, that never yet didst good ?

you runnagate, devourer of thy blood,

eed now to GOD, may I thy master be

me any field, thou shalt far rather die

then shal a Turk, for thy false cruel wear :

gans to us do not so meikle dear.

righten leugh the *Bruce* at *Wallace* earnestness,  
and said : Thou seest that thus stands the case ;

ere this day thou art with power overset,

against yon King overhand ye may not get.

*Stephen Wallace* said : We are by meikle thing,

onger this day in contrary yon King,

men at *Bigger*, where he left many of his,

and als the field, so shal he do with this :

to the field we have lost many a Knight,

die therefore, for all his meikle might,

and *Scotland* now into such peril stadt,

leave it thus, I might be called mad.

*Wallace*, he said, it approacheth near night,

would thou to morn when that the day is light,

nine of clock, meet me at the Chappel,

*Dunipace*, I would hear thy counsel.

*Wallace* said : Nay, ere that each time be spent,

ere all the men hence in the Orient,

one will with *Edward* who had sworn,

shall bargan ere nine hours of the morn :

of this wrong reaf, either he shal think shame,

or die therefore, or flee in *England* hame.

But and thou wilt, soon by the hour of three,  
At that each tryst, will God, I shall thee see.  
While I may last, this Realm shal not forfare.  
Bruce promis'd him with twelve Scots to be the ruler  
Then Wallace said: Stood thou righteous to me  
A contrare part I should not be to thee.  
I shal bring ten, and for thy power mo,  
I give no force, though thou be freind or fo.  
Thus they departed. Bruce passed thus away,  
To Lithgow rode where that King Edward lay  
The field had left, and lodged by south the towrekin  
At supper set as Bruce at the pavilion,  
He entred in, and saw vacand his seat,  
No water took, but made him to the meat,  
Fasting he was, and been in meikle dread.  
Bloody was all his weapons and his weed.  
The Sutherland Lords scorned on terms rude,  
And said; behold yon Scot eats his own blood.  
The King thought evil they made such derision,  
Bade have water to Bruce of Huntingtown.  
They bade him wash; he said, that he would nougat the  
This blood is mine that huris most my thought.  
Sadly the Bruce then in his minde remorded,  
The words sooth Wallace had him recorded;  
Then rewed he sore, fra reas, on he had known,  
That blood and land should both have been his  
With them he was long ere he got away, (owd hou  
But contrare Scots he fought not from that day,  
Leave i the Bruce sore mourning in his intent;  
Good Wallace soon again to his Host went,  
In the Torwood which had their lodging made,  
Fires they beit that was both bright and brade.

e, of folt and sheep they took at suffisance,  
hereof full soon to get them sustenance.  
Wallace sleeped but short while and soon rose,  
he to rule the Host on a good pce he goes.  
the Earl *Malcome*, *Ramsay*, and *Lundie* wight,  
and five thousand in battel then he dight.  
Wallace, *Lawder*, and *Christel* of *Setown*,  
five thousand led, and *Wallace* of *Richartoun*,  
all well arrayed into their armour clean,  
yest to the field where that the chase had been,  
overking dead men, amongst the worchiest (most)  
the corps of *Graham*, for whom they mourned  
When they him fand, & good *Wallace* him saw,  
he lighted down, him hint before them aw  
arms up, beholding his pale face,  
he kissed him, and cryed full oft : Alace !  
my best brother in world that ever I had :  
mine efold freind when I was hardest stid :  
mine hope, mine health, thou wast of most honour,  
by faith, mine help, my strengthner into stour.  
gladhee was wit, freedom, and hardiness :  
in thee was truth, manhood, and uoblenesse :  
in thee was rule, in thee was governance :  
in thee vertue withoutten variance :  
in thee lawty, in thee was great largeness :  
in thee gentries, in thee was steadfastnes :  
thou wast great cause of winning of *Scotland*,  
though I began and took the war in hand,  
vow to God that hath the world to wald,  
by death shal be to *Sutherland* full dear sald.  
martyr thou art for *Scotlands* right and me :  
shal be venged, or else therefore shal die.

Was no man there from weeping might refrain,  
 For loss of him, when they heard Wallace plain.  
 They carried him with worship and honour,  
 In the Fawkirk made him a sepulchre.

Wallace commanded his men therefore to byde allat  
 His ten he took, for to meet Bruce they ryde alight  
 South-west he past where that the tryst was set, em  
 The Bruce full soon and good Wallace have met the  
 For loss of Graham, and als for proper teen;  
 He grew in yre when he the Bruce hath seen.  
 Their saluting was but bouteous and thrown :  
 Rews thou, he said, thou art contrare thine own fthe  
 Bruce said : Wallace, rebute me now no more,  
 Mine own deeds have bet me wondere sore.  
 When Wallace heard with Bruce that it stood allac  
 On knees he fell, fair countenance can him ma,  
 In arms soon the Bruce hath Wallace tane,  
 Out from their men in counsel are they gane :  
 I cannot tel perfectly their language,  
 But this was it their men had of knowledge :  
 Wallace him prayed: Come from the Sutheron kin disa  
 [The Bruce said : Nay, there lets me yet one thin mong  
 I am so bound with witness to be leal,  
 For all England, I would not false my seal.  
 But one thing here I heght to God and thee,  
 That contrare Scots again I shal not be ;  
 Into a field with weapons that I bear,  
 In my purpose, I shal thee never dear :  
 If God thee grants over-hand of us to have,  
 I wil not flee mine own self for to save,  
 And Edward scape, I pass with him again,  
 But through force be either tane or slain.

rain, speak he on me when that my tearm is out,  
 plain come to thee, may I scape from that doubt.  
 r, of their counsel I cannot tell you mair,  
 ne Bruce took leave, and can to Edward fare?  
 byde Wallace in haste provided soon his Host,  
 yde sight fid in minde for Scots men that he lost.  
 as set, made Crawford the Earl Malcome to guide,  
 e me the low way to Inverravin to ride,  
 but their watches then should not them espy ;  
 en. the other Host himself fled hastily,  
 n : south Manwel, while that they were between,  
 t own the out-watches thus scaped they unseen.  
 ore, the Earl Malcome on Lithgow entred in,  
 . here hastily a great strife can begin.  
 ood Wallace was nougall to the battel bown,  
 na. when they heard the cry rise into that town,  
 n Edwards Host they set full suddenly ;  
 e : Wallace and his made little noyse and cry,  
 at occupyed with weapons in that stour,  
 : til felled to death that was without armour,  
 on kind disarrayed the English Host was than,  
 e thin mongst the pavilions, where Scots ful many mad  
 uited down cords, gart many tents fall ;  
 one sonzeit then, at once were fighting all ;  
 ee, at Wallace Host & Earl Malcome with might.  
 ing Edward then with awful fear on hight,  
 tyed to array on Bruce so stern and stout.  
 twenty thousand in arms him about,  
 e, to harness had bidden all that night,  
 at frayed folk so dolefully been dight,  
 each side fled, for fearednes of their dead ;  
 Wallace and his so roughly through them yeed,

Toward the King, and felled feil to ground.  
Who bode them there right fell fighting there  
The cruel King right awfully abade, (foun  
To all his folk a great comfort he made :  
The worthy Scots amongst them in that stour,  
Feil Sutheron flew into their fine armour :  
Before the King made slops them among,  
So forwardly they preassid in that throng.  
*English* commons they fled on either side,  
But noble men, there durst none other byde.  
The Bruce as then to Scots made no grievance,  
But judge he was with feinzier countenance :  
So did he never into no battel air,  
Nor yet after such deed as he showed there.  
The Earl Hartfurd to flee he made him bown,  
The Earl Malcome by that came in the town ;  
The Lennox men set their lodges on fire,  
Then fearedly fled many Sutheron syre.  
The King Edward that yet was fighting still,  
Hath seen them flee, and liked them full ill.  
The worthy Scots fast toward him they preass,  
His bridle neir assayed ere they would cease ;  
His Banner-man in that place Wallace flew,  
And then to ground the banner soon it flew.  
The Earle of York counselled the King to flee,  
And so returned, since no succour they see.  
The Englishmen have seen the banner fall,  
Without comfort to flee they purpose all.  
Ten thousand men in field and town was dead,  
Of Edwards folk, ere himself left that stead.  
Twenty thousand away together rade,  
King and Chiftains no longer tarry made ;

ok I the Scots in haste then to their horle they yeed,  
 and. stuff the chase with worthy men indeed.  
 g the Lennox folk that wanted horse and gear,  
 found them at will to help them in their wear,  
 stragle rode, what Scots might formost pass,  
 our, in Sutheron men full great slaughter there was;  
 Wallace hath seen the Scots unorderly  
 follow the chase, he made masters in hy  
 hem for to rule, and altogether tyde,  
 commanding them, each one should other byde.  
 to flying the Sutheron subtil are,  
 e they a time, they will set on full fair.  
 il scailed folk to them will soon renew.  
 or ye see well that they are men anew.  
 e followers was ruled well with skil,  
 good array they rode all at his will,  
 and flew down fast, what Sutheron they overtake,  
 ontrare the Scots came not mastry to make,  
 to that chase they hasted all so near,  
 o Englishmen durst from the Host out stear.  
 the frayed folk at stragle were fleeand,  
 drew to the King well mo then ten thousand.  
 hirty thousand in number then were they,  
 to array together they pist away.  
 il Scots horse so driven was in travel,  
 ore-run that day, and irked began to fail;  
 The Sutheron was with horse served so well,  
 Of Wallace chase the Sutheron had some feell,  
 Of horse they were purveyed in great wain,  
 The King changed on sundry horse of Spain.  
 Then Wallace said; Lords, ye may well see,  
 Yon folk are now all that yon King may be,

For fault of stuff we lose over meikle thing ;  
 Had we good horse to pass before yon King,  
 We should make end of all this long debate,  
 Yet some of them shal be handled so heat ;  
 Part of our horse are holden fresh and wight,  
 Set on them fast while that we are in might ;  
 With that the *Scots* so hard amongst them drew,  
 Of the outmost three thousand men they slew.  
 In *Crawfurd* mure many a man was slain.  
*Edward* gart call the *Bruce* of meikle main ;  
 Then said he thus ; Good Earl of *Huntingtown*,  
 Yee see the *Scots* put many to confusion,  
 Would ye with men again on them relieve,  
 And mar them once, I shal while that I live,  
 Love you far more then any other Knight,  
 And for all this, shal put you in your right.  
 Then said the *Bruce* ; Sir, loose me of my band  
 And I shal turn, I heght you by my hand.  
 The King soon considered in his minde,  
 When he heard *Bruce* answer him in this kinde,  
 From *Englishmen* the *Bruce* heart set is :  
 Then cast he this, how he should mend this mi.  
 And so he did in *England* at his will,  
 No *Scots*-man he let with *Bruce* byde still,  
 But where he past, held him in subjection,  
 Of *Englishmen* under a great bandon.  
 He turned not, nor no more language made,  
 In rayed battel the King to *Sulway* rade,  
 With meikle pain past upon *Englands* coaste,  
 Fifty thousand in that travel they lost.  
 When *Vallace* saw he escaped was away,  
 Upon command again returned they.

To Edinburgh, withouten words more,  
Put in Crawfurd that Captain was before,  
Of heritge be had in Manwel land.

Wallace commanded each man should hold in hand  
Their own Office, as they before time had,  
Put in good peace, Scotland in right he stod.

On the tenth day to Saint Johnstoun he went,  
Assembled Lords then showed them his intent.

Scrimgeour came that then had won Dundie,  
Wallace command that time well keeped he.

He failed so while strong hunger them drove,  
Feebled them so, the house to him they gave.

These wageours soon they put to confusion,  
Then brought Morton. to make a conlusion,  
Before Wallace, and soon fra he him saw,  
He gart hang him for all King Edwards aw.

Masons and minds with Scrimgeour forth he send,  
Gast down Dundie, and thereof made an end.

Wallace sadly when these deeds were done,  
The Lords he called, and his will show'd them soon:  
Good men, he said, I was your Governour,  
My minde was set to do you ay honour,  
And for to bring this Realm to righteousness :  
For it I past in many painful place.

To win our own, my self I never spar'd,  
At the Fawkirk they ordained me reward :  
Of their reward ye hear no more through me ;  
Unto such gifts, God will full well have eye.  
Now ye are free, through the Maker of might,  
He grant you grace for to defend your right.

Als I presume, if harm be ordain'd me,  
They are Scots-men which should the workers be

For fault of stuff we lose over meikle thing ;  
Had we good horse to pass before yon King,  
We should make end of all this long debate,  
Yet some of them shal be handled so heat ;  
Part of our horse are holden fresh and wight,  
Set on them fast while that we are in might ;  
With that the *Scots* so hard amongst them drew  
Of the outmost three thousand men they slew.  
In *Crawfurd* mure many a man was slain.

*Edward* gart call the *Bruce* of meikle main ;  
Then said he thus ; Good Earl of *Huntingtown*,  
Yee see the *Scots* put many to confusion,  
Would ye with men again on them relieve,  
And mar them once, I shal while that I live,  
Love you far more then any other Knight,  
And for all this, shal put you in your right.  
Then said the *Bruce* ; Sir, loose me of my band  
And I shal turn, I heght you by my hand.

The King soon considered in his minde,  
When he heard *Bruce* answer him in this kinde,  
From *Englishmen* the *Bruce* heart set is :

Then cast he this, how he should mend this mi  
And so he did in *England* at his will,  
No *Scots*-man he let with *Bruce* byde still,  
But where he past, held him in subjection,  
Of *Englishmen* under a great bandon.

He turned not, nor no more language made,  
In rayed battel the King to *Sulway* rade,  
With meikle pain past upon *Englands* coast,  
Fifty thousand in that travel they lost.

When *VWallace* saw he escaped was away,  
Upon command again returned they,

To Edinburgh, withouten words more,  
Put in Crawford that Captain was before,  
Of heritage be had in Manwel land.

Wallace commanded each man should hold in hand  
Their own Office, as they before time had,  
Put in good peace, Scotland in right he stod.

On the tenth day to Saint Johnstoun he went,  
Assembled Lords then showed them his intent.

Scrimgeour came that then had won Dundie,  
Wallace command that time well keeped he.

He sailed so while strong hunger them drove,  
Feebled them so, the house to him they gave.

These wageours soon they put to confusion,  
Then brought Morton to make a conlusion,

Before Wallace, and soon fra he him saw,  
He gart hang him for all King Edwards aw.

Masons and minds with Scrimgeour forth he send,  
Cast down Dundie, and thereof made an end.

Wallace sadly when these deeds were done,  
The Lords he called, and his will show'd them soon.  
Good men, he said, I was your Governour,  
My minde was set to do you ay honour,  
And for to bring this Realm to righteousness :  
For it I past in many painful place.

To win our own, my self I never spar'd,  
At the Fawkirk they ordained me reward :  
Of their reward ye hear no more through me ;  
Unto such gifts, God will full well have eye.  
Now ye are free, through the Maker of might,  
He grant you grace for to defend your right.

Als I presume, if harm be ordain'd me,  
They are Scots-men which should the workers be

I have enough of our old enemies strife :  
 Me thinks our own should not envy my life :  
 Mine Office here over plainly I resign :  
 I think no more to take on me such thing.  
 In France I will, and win my living there,  
 As now advised, and home to come no more.  
 Lords gain-stood, but all that helped nought,  
 For any there, he did as himself thought.  
 Bishop Sinkler was visited with sickness  
 Into Dunkeld, and then through God's grace,  
 He recovered when Wallace past away :  
 After the Bruce he lived many a day.  
 Good Wallace thus took leave in Saint John ston  
 Eighteen with him to Dundie made them bown  
 Longoveil past that doughty was indeed,  
 The Barrons son of Brechin with him yeed.  
 Two brethren old with their uncle them dight,  
 Symon Wallace, and Richard that were wight.  
 Sir Thomas Gray, this Priest can with him fare,  
 Edward Little, and Iop, and Master Blair.  
 Good Keirly past, had been with Wallace long,  
 And done full well in many felon throng.  
 This Keirly then that could with Wallace fare,  
 Will Ker he heght, mine Author will declare :  
 Keirly in Irish, is but Ker [ Little ] call'd,  
 In Carrick he had heritage of ald :  
 His forbearer which worthy was of hand,  
 Saint David King him brought out of Ireland :  
 Then at Dummoir where first Norway's came in  
 This Ker made great discomfice of their kin,  
 With seven hundred vanquisht nine thousand,  
 Some drowned in Down, some slain upon the Land

whose whole lands the good King gave him till.  
Now Wallace past now further speak I will.

## C H A P. II.

Wallace met with John of Lyn upon the sea.  
A Mong Merchants thus Wallace took the sea,  
Pray we to God that he their helper be ;  
they sailed forth by part of England shore,  
to Humber-mouth when that they came before,  
out of the south a great red sail they see,  
to the top three Leopards standing hie :  
the Merchants then the sign when that they saw,  
coming so near, they were discomfort aw :  
it well they wist that it was John of Lyn,  
not to slay he said it was no sin.

These frayed folk they yeed to confession.  
Then Wallace said ; Such a devotion  
I saw I never, in no place where I past,  
that for one ship ye should be all agast :  
yon wood cats shal do but little dear,  
Ye saw them fail twise mo when they were,  
in a fair field, so shal they on the sea.

Despite it is to see them stand so hie.  
The stiers-men said : Sir, will ye understand,  
he saveth none that is born of Scotland :  
Ye may not flee from yon barge, wot I wel ;  
Well stuffed they are with gun and gainzie of steel ;  
Upon the sea yon Reaver long hath been,  
To righteous men he doth full me kle teen :  
In light we be saved, we rek not for our good.  
This use he hath, shortly for to conclude,  
A flood he bears upon his coat armour,  
And drowning folk, so painted in his figures.

Suppose we mourn, ye should have no marvel.  
 Then Wallace said : Here is men of more vail  
 To sail the ship, therefore in How thou ga,  
 And thy fires, no more cummer us ma.

VWallace and his then soon to harness yeed :  
 When they were gaitched into their worthy weed  
 Himself and Blair, and the Knight Longoveit,  
 These three hath tane to keep the mid-ship well  
 Before were eight, and six be eft he kend :  
 Then two he chose the top for to defend.  
 And Gray he made their stiers-man for to be:  
 The Merchands then saw them so manfullie  
 Defend themselves, because they had no weed,  
 Out of the How they took then skins good speed  
 Ay betwixt two stuffed wool as they might best,  
 Against the stroak, that they might some part lefft  
 Then VWallace leugh, and commended them aw,  
 Of such harness before he never saw.  
 By that the barge came on them wonder fast,  
 Seven score in her that were nothing agast:  
 When John of Lyn saw them in armour bright,  
 He leugh, and said these naughty words on hight  
 You glaikid Scots can us not understand :  
 They are but fools, and new come from the land  
 He cryed, strike : but none answer them made,  
 Blair with a bow shot fast withouten bade :  
 Ere they clipped he shot but arrows three,  
 And at each shot he gart a reaver die.  
 The briggans then they bickered wonder fast,  
 Amongst the Scots with shot of guns cast,  
 And they again with spears headed well,  
 Feil wounds they made through plaits of finest st

Either other fathned with clippes so keen,  
 A cruel counter was at that ship-boord seen :  
 The derf shot drove as thick as hail shour,  
 Lasted there well near the space of an hour.  
 When shot was gone, the Scots great comfort had,  
 At hand stroaks they were sikker and sad.  
 The Merchants als with such things as they might,  
 Proved full well in defence of their right.  
*Wallace* and his at near straiks when they see,  
 With sharp swords they gart feil briggans die.  
 They in the top so wightly wrought on hand,  
 In the south top there might no reaver stand,  
 All the mid-ship of reavers was made walt,  
 That to give over at point they were almast :  
 Then *John of Lyn* was right graichly agast,  
 He saw his folk about him failie fast,  
 With eager will he would have been away,  
 Bide windē the sail in all the haste they may :  
 But from the Scots then might they not eskey,  
 The ships so sore on either side they wey :  
 They saw no thing that migh be to them ease,  
 Crawfurd on loft their sail burnt in a bliese.  
 Ere *John of Lyn* shaipl for to leave that stead,  
 Of his best men sixcy were brought to dead.  
 Their ship by ours a boord was more in hight,  
 Wallace lap in amongst the reavers wight,  
 A man he strak over ship-boord in the sea :  
 On the over-lift he flew soon other three.  
 Longovail entred; and als good Master Blair,  
 They gave no grace to frieks that they found ther  
 Wallace himself with *John of Lyn* hath met,  
 At his collar a felon straik him set,

Both helm and head from the shoulder he drave,  
*Blair* over the boord in the sea cast the lave  
 Of his body, then all the remanand  
 Entred and lew the brigans that they fand:  
 The ship they took, both gold and other gear,  
 That those reavers had gathered long in wear.  
 But Master *Blair* spake nothing of himiel,  
 In deed of arms what eventure that befel.  
 Sir *Thomas Gray* was Priest then to *Wallace*,  
 Put in this hook how them hapned this case  
 That *Blair* was in, and many worthy deed,  
 Of which himself had no pleasance to read.  
*Wallace* gart rule the ship with his own men,  
 And sailed forth the right course for to ken:  
 Into the *Sluce* haven while they entred be,  
 The Merchants well he helped in safety:  
 Of gold and gear they took part that they fand,  
 Gave them the ship, then passed to the land,  
 Through *Flanders* rode upon a goodly wife,  
 Entred *France*, and then past to *Paris*:  
 The glad tydings that to the King was brought  
 Of *V Wallace* coming, it comfort all their thought  
 They trowed by him to get redress of wrong,  
 The *Sutheron* had in *Guyen* wrought so long,  
 The Peirs of *France* were at their Parliament:  
 The King commanded with true and whole intent  
 They should fore-see a Lordship for *V Wallace*.  
 The Lords then all deemed of this case,  
 For *Guyen* was all whole out of their hand,  
 They thought it best for to give him that land:  
 For well they trowed he had wrought so before,  
 He should it win, or else go die therefore:

ve; so of it they might no profit have,  
that was the cause that *Wallace* should it have:  
his decree soon they shewed unto the King,  
unpleased he was they made him such a thing.  
*Guyen* thus, when *Wallace* had a feell,  
of land, he said, liked him half so well:  
my chance is thus for to be ay in wear,  
and *Englishmen* have done our Realm most dear.  
was well known my defence righteous there:  
light have I here, my comfort is the mair.  
thank you Lords, made such reward to me,  
our purpose is I should not idle be.

the King bade him be Duke of *Guyen* land.  
so that command *Wallace* was gain-standand,  
because that land was hastily to conquish;  
his thought was ay to win it through God grace.  
but nevertheless the King had made him Knight,  
and gave him gold for to maintain his right;  
and then gave charge to all war-men in *France*,  
they should be whole at *Wallace* ordinance.  
and also of him he bade him arms to take:  
he *Wallace* forsook such changing for to make.

Since I began, I bore the red Lyon,  
And thinks to be ay true man to the Crown.  
I think you, Sir, of this mighty reward,  
you men herefore shal not right long be spar'd:  
I think to quite some part ye kyched on me,  
In your service, or else therefore to die.

Good *Wallace* thought his time he would not waste  
Unto the wars he graithed him in haste;  
All *Scottis* men that were into that Land,  
To him they sought with their fewty and bands.

Long live

Longoveil als a great power can raise,  
 In Wallace help this good Knight gladly gaes:  
 Ten thousand whole ot noble men they were,  
 The broad banner display'd of Scotland there.  
 These war-men soon upon Guyen they sure,  
 Broke buildings down which had been stark a  
 Sutheron they flew against them made debate,(flue  
 Brightly on broad they raised fires full hate.  
 Shemon they took that Wallace first had won,  
 And flew all men of Sutheron there was found,  
 Into that town Wallace his dwelling made,  
 All thereabout he wan the Countrey brade.  
 The worthy Duke of Orleans was Lord,  
 Sembled his folk into a good accord,  
 Twelve thousand then he had in armour bright,  
 And thought to help good Wallace in his right.  
 Leave I them thus, the Duke and Wallace baith  
 And speak some part how Scotland took great skair.

## C H A P. III.

*How Edward King of England came into Scotland, and made whole conquishe thereof.*

The false envy, and the wicked treason  
 Amongst themselves, broght feil to confusion  
 The Knight Vallange in Scotland made repair  
 The false Menteith Sir John withoutten mair,  
 Betwixt them two was made a private band,  
 So on a day they met into Annand:  
 Of the Lennox Sir John had great desire,  
 Sir Aymar heght he should have it in hyre,  
 To hold in fee, and other lands mo;  
 Of King Edward, so he would passe him to.

us corded they, and then to London went :

ward was glad to hear that appointment.

Menteith anone was bound to that fierce King,  
further him in Scotland in all thing.

then passed home, and Wallange with him fure,  
while he was brought again over Carlile mure.

Edward then in ire and fierce outrage,  
y thirty dayes he raised his barnage,

in Scotland post, and there no stopping fand :

No Chiftain was that durst against him stand :

or Menteith told they thought to make Bruce king,

All true Scots would be pleased of that thing :

Yet many fled, and durst not byde Edward,

Come into Rosse, and in the Isles past part.

Bishop Sinclair again fled into Bute,

With that fierce King he had no will to mute.

Thus without straik the Castles of Scotland,

King Edward hath cane into his own hand :

Divided then to men that he would like, (rick:

con strengths and towns to Rosse, through the King-

Both height and val obeyed whole his will ;

That he commanded they purposd to fulfill.

The Bishops all inclined to his Crown,

Both temporal, and the Religion.

The Romane books that then were in Scotland,

He gart them bear to Scoon, where they them fand

And but redeem they burnt them all each ane,

Salisbury use our Clerks then hath cane :

The Lords he took that would not of him hold,

In England sent the noble blood of old.

Sir William long Dowglas to London send

In strong prison, and there he made an end.

Earl Thomas als that Lord was of Murray,  
 And Lord Fraser, with him to pass away ;  
 Als Hew the Hay, and other heirs mo,  
 He gart Valence with him in England goo  
 No man was leſt all this main Land within,  
 From Edwards peace, known of any kin.  
 Setoun and Lawder dwelt ſtil into the Bass,  
 With them Lundie, and men that worthy was.  
 The Earl Malcome and Campbel paſt but let  
 In Bute, ſuccour with Sinkler for to get.  
 Sir John Ramſay and Ruthven they fled North  
 To their couſin that Lord was of Fillorth.  
 He paſt with them through Murray lands right,  
 So found they there a gentle worthy Knight,  
 That Clement heignt, ful cruel ay had been,  
 And fended well amonſt their enemies keen.  
 He thought never at Edwards will to be,  
 Into his time he gart feil Sutheron die.  
 He led theſe Lords in Ross withouten mair,  
 At the Stockford a ſtrong strength bigged there,  
 Kepted it long right worthily by wear,  
 To their enemies they did full meikle dear.  
 Adam Wallace and Lindesay of Craigie,  
 Away they fled by night unto the ſea ;  
 And Robert Boyd that was both wiſe and wight,  
 Arran they took to fend them at their might :  
 And Corſpatrick into Dumbar dwelt ſtill,  
 Fewty full ſoon he made King Edward till.  
 Abernethy, Lord Soules and Cumming als,  
 And John of Lorn that long time had been false ;  
 Lord of Brechin, and many other ma,  
 At Edwards peace, for giſts that he them ga.

King of peace for twenty days set he,  
of Englishmen in Lorn, that men might see,  
ain to declare : but of this cause, I wis,  
hat all Scotland by conquest then was his.  
the Lords then, and good Bishop Sinkler,  
ut of Bute then they made a Ballongair,  
o good Wallace told him the torment hail :  
hen wrote they thus to get help of their bail.

Our hope, our health, & our whole Governour  
Our goodly guide, our best Chiftain in stour.  
Our Lord, our love, our strength in righteous place  
or GOD s sake relieve us of this case,  
nd take the Crown, to us it were kinder,  
So brook for ay, ere fierce Edward it bear.  
The writ he got, but yet suffer he would,  
or great falsehood that part him did of old.  
Meikle dolour it did him in his minde,  
Of their missare, for true he was and kinde :  
He thought to take a mends of their great wrang,  
He answered not, but into war forth rang.  
Of King Edward yet more forth I will mell,  
n what wise that he could Scotland deal :  
n Saint Johnstoun the Earl of York he made  
Captain to be of all these Lands brade,  
from Tay to Dee, and under him Buttellar :  
His good-shyre had at Kinclevin ended there,  
His father als, Wallace had them both slain,  
Edward therefore made him a man of main.  
The Lord Bewmont into the North he send,  
These Lordships whole he gave them in commend  
To Striviling then from saint Johnstoun he went,  
There to fulfil the lave of his intent.

The Lord Clifford he had then Dowglas-dail,  
 Ruler to be of the south marches hail :  
 All Galloway he gave Cumming in hand :  
 Wist none but God how long that state shold ha  
 With the gentle Lord Bishop Lambertoun,  
 Of Saint Andrews was Dowglas of renown .  
 Before that time young James wight and wise,  
 To him was come from the schools of Paris.  
 A private favour the Bishop to him bare ;  
 But Englishmen were so great masters there,  
 He durst not well in plain show him kindnesse,  
 While on a day he took some hardinesse.  
 Dowglas he called, and can to Striviling fare,  
 Where King Edward was dealing lands there,  
 He profered him unto the Kings service,  
 To brook his own, fra he wist on this wife  
 Dowglas he was, then he forsook plainly,  
 Swears by Saint George he brooks no land of me  
 His father was in contrare of my Crown,  
 Therefore as now he bides in our prison.  
 To the Bishop none other answer he made,  
 But as he pleased dealt on their lands brade,  
 To the Lord Soulis all whole the Mers gave he  
 And Captain als of Berwick for to be,  
 Oliphant then that he in Striviling fand,  
 When he him had he would not keep his band,  
 The which he made ere he him Striviling gave,  
 Deceitfully the King could him deceive,  
 Into England sent him in prison strong,  
 In great distresse he lived there full long :  
 When King Edward had dealt this Region,  
 His leave he took, to England made him bown,

ail, ut of Striviling southward as they can ryde.  
Cumming hapned near hand the Bruce to byde.  
thus said he: Sir, and ye can keep counsel,  
can you learn which may you best avail.  
the Bruce answered: What ever ye show to me,  
as for my part, shal well concealed be.  
Lord Cumming said: Sir, ye know not this thing,  
Of all this Realm ye should be righteous King.  
Then said the Bruce: Suppose I righteous be,  
see no time to take such thing on me,  
am holden into mine enemies hand,  
Under great oath when I came in Scotland.  
To part from him, for profit nor request,  
Nor for no strength, but if death me arrest:  
He heght again to give this Land to me:  
Now find I well it is but subtily:  
For this thou sees he deals mine heritage  
To Sutheron part, and some to traitours wage.  
Then Cumming said: Will ye therefore con cord,  
Of my lands and ye like to be Lord,  
Ye shal them have for your right and the Crown;  
Or and ye like, Sir, for my varison,  
I shal you help with power at my might.  
The Bruce answered; I will not sell my right,  
But on this wise, what Lordship thou wouldest  
For thy supply, I heght thou shal it have. (crave,  
Come from yon king, Sir, with some jeopardie.  
Now Edward hath all Galloway given to me,  
My nevoy Soules that keeps Barnwick town,  
At your command his power shal be bown;  
My nevoy als a man of meikle might,  
The Lord of Lorn, hath great rowm in the hight;

My

My third nevoy a knight of great renown,  
Will rise with us, of Brechin the Barron.  
Then said the *Bruce*: Fell there so sore a chance  
That we might get again *Wallace* from France,  
By wit and force he could this Kinrick win:  
Alace, we have been over lang in twin.  
To that language *Cumming* made no record,  
For old done deeds did in his mind remord.  
The *Bruce* and he compleated forth their band,  
Then that same night sealed it with their hand:  
This ragment left the *Bruce* with *Cumming* ther  
With *Edward* king in *England* home could fare,  
And their remained while this ragment was know  
Three years and more ere *Bruce* claimed his ow  
Some men deems *Cumming* the ragment send,  
Some men again the contrare doth defend.  
None may say well that *Cumming* was sakeless,  
Because his wife was *Edwards* couzenels:  
He served death by right law of the King,  
He recklesly miskeeped such a thing.  
Had *Bruce* past by but bode to Saint Johnstoun,  
By whole assent, and had received the Crown,  
On *Cumming* then he might have done the law  
He could not chole fra time that he him saw.  
Thus Scotland left in hard perplexitie,  
Of *Wallace* more in some part speak will we.

*The end of the Eleventh Book.*

# THE TWELFTH BOOK.

## C H A P. I.

*How Wallace conquest the land of Guyen, and how he was made Lord thereof.*

**T**He sore travel, the earnest busyness,  
The fell labour he had in many place :  
To win the land that the good King him  
Unto his reign he would no Sutheron save. (gave,  
In Guyen land Wallace was still at wear,  
Of Scotlands loss it did his heart great dear :  
Of true Scots in minde he had great pitie,  
He thought to help his time when he might see.  
Of set battels five he discomfist hail,  
With jeopardie and many strong assaile :  
Then they forsook, and durst not him abyde,  
The Sutheron fled from thence one either side,  
To Burdeous into great multiply :  
The town they stoff with vittails by the sea.  
All Guyen land Wallace took to his peace,  
To Burdeous he past ere he would cease :  
On out-biggings full great mastery he made,  
Still twenty dayes at strong assaiting bade :  
Forts and works that were without the town,  
They brake and burnt, and put to confusion.  
Hedges and alleyes by labour that was there,  
Foiled and spoiled, they would no fruits spare.  
The Englishmen made great defence again,  
With shot and cast that meikle were of main;

Of guns they were, and ganzies stuffed well,  
 All artailzie and weapons of fine steel,  
 With men and meat within was busked been :  
 The great Captain was wise, cruel and keen,  
 Of Gloucester the hudge Lord and heir :  
 The Earl had ay been used into weir,  
 Kept his men by wit and hardiment,  
 Without the town there durst none from him  
 The land without was near wasted away, (wend his  
 War men so long into the Country lay :  
 In Wallace Host such scant was of victual,  
 They might not byde no longer to assaile.  
 Then this wise Lord, the Duke of Orleans,  
 To Wallace said : Sir, ye should know this chancend  
 It stands over well with this false Sutheron blood kee  
 For on no wise can we now stop their food :  
 The have they have, and ships at their will,  
 From England comes victual enough them till :  
 The Land is poor of victuall should us bield,  
 And ye see wel that they forsake the field.  
 Ye may with peace plenish these Lands wyde,  
 They will not fight though ye all yeare shoulour  
 My counsel is in plain anent this thing, (byde f  
 That ye would pass with worship to the King,  
 By his assent ye may at leisure wail,  
 With provision against them to assaile.  
 Wallace inclined, and thanked this wise Lord,  
 Then they returned all with one good accord,  
 Past up in France with honour to the King,  
 And shew'd him the whole verity of this thing,  
 And he thereof in heart was wonder glad.  
 French-men before a hundred years not had

I, of Guyen half so meikle in their hand.  
Sryting by then was new coming of Scotland,  
From part of Lords, and good Bishop Sinkler,  
Sought this King into these tearms fair,  
This gentrice, and of his goodly grace,  
For their supply to counsel goodly Wallace  
To come again, and bring them from bandon,  
And take to wear the Crown of that Region.

Then his writ as then he would not to him shaw,  
Right loath he was for friendship, feed, or aw,  
Wallace should pass so soon from his presence :  
Dwelling place he took for his residence,  
Shemon still Wallace his dwelling made,  
And held about right liking lands brade.  
Good Captain then claimed in heritage  
Office of it, and great lands into wage ;  
Wherefore he thought good Wallace for to slay,  
Under colour such mastery for to ma :

Long time he sought to get a day and place ;  
Said, he desired then service of Wallace.

A cryst they set with fifteen on the side,  
Bouldrey thereby he gart in bushment byde,  
Deffmen in arms. When he with Wallace met,  
Right awfully he bade them on him set.

No armour had Wallace men in that place,  
But sword and knife they bore on them through  
Part of his men left near a forest side : ( case,  
Right boasteously the Captain said that tyde,  
That Wallace held of his lands with unright.  
Right soberly he said to that French Knight,  
I have no lands but what the King gave me,  
My self therefore have been in jeopardie.

The Knight then said, Thy life shal be forlorn,  
 Or else that land, the contrare who had swom  
 Aback he lap, and out a sword he drew,  
 The bushment broke when he that token shew  
 Good Wallace thought that matters stood  
 He gryped soon a sheating sword of steel, (w  
 And at one straik the Knight to death he draw  
 About sixteen then lapped all the lave.

Wallace and his so worthily have wrought,  
 Full feil they flew that forest on them fought  
 The knights brother that stalwart was and stren  
 And thoght they should be venged ere they ga  
 Of Wallace men some part he wounded fair.

Mowing there was into a meadow there,  
 Nine stout Carles, all servants to that Knight,  
 Sythes then they took, and ran in all their mig  
 To the fighters : ere they came near that place  
 But them perceived right well hath good Wall  
 So awful thing of such we never saw :

Them to resist, himself can to them draw.  
 Into that stour left his men fighting still,  
 To meet these Carles that came with eager wi  
 The first let draw at Wallace with his syth,  
 Deliver he was, and high over-lap the syth,  
 An acward straik hit the Churle on the head,  
 Derfly on ground he hath him lefe for dead :  
 The other he met, over-lap the syth so keen,  
 On the shoulder als strike him in that teen,  
 Through all the cost the noble sword is share.  
 The third he met with a full awful fare,  
 The grounden syth at Wallace he let draw,  
 This good Churle in cleanly overslap them aw :

With his good sword he made an hideous wound  
Worke him for dead, then on the fourth can found  
The right bone in great yre can him es,  
neweaved to coast right cruelly in twa :  
Good tree for most sythes this good *VWallace* over-esp,  
(wodfour he slew, they saw such was his hap :  
raway a man he slew at every each straik :  
The last fled first, thus can their power flaik :  
*VWallace* fast followed, and soon the fifth over-taes,  
ightake him to death that no further he gae :  
straken sped him soon unto his men again,  
y ge then they had the Knights brother slain,  
sixty and six derly to death were dight,  
cept seven men that fled out of their sight.  
ht, we Mawers als that *VWallace* self with met,  
mig French-men since no such cryst was set :  
ace cause that they him brought to such a case,  
allane King heard tell well scaped was *VWallace*,  
nt for him soon, and prayed him to be  
f his hou:hold, and live in good safetie :  
r well he saw they had him at envy.  
will with himself he gart him byde for tby.  
two years there *VWallace* with mirth abade,  
ill into France many good journey made.  
the King him pleased in all his goodly main,  
om him he thought he should not part again,  
ords and Ladies honoured him reverently,  
tetches and shrews ay held him at envy,

## C H A P. I I.

*How Wallace slew the two Champions.*

Two Champions that time dwelt with the King,  
Had great despite at Wallace in all thing :



Togethee

Together yeed ay these two Champions,  
 Of fellow force, and foward of conditions :  
 Right great despite they spake ay of Scotland,  
 While on a day it hapned upon hand,  
*Wallace* and they were leaved them alone,  
 By adventure into an house of stone :  
 They used to bear no weapons in that hall,  
 They trowed therefore amys they might not fall  
 There communed they of Scotland scornfully.  
 Then *Wallace* said : Ye wrong us utterly :  
 Since we are bound in friendship to our King,  
 And he of us is pleased of all thing.  
 Als Scots men hath helped this Realm from dread  
 Me think ye should give good words for good dee  
 What may ye speak of our enemies but ill ;  
 In lightnes they made answer theretill,  
 And him despited in their language als.  
 Ye Scots, they said, have ever yet been false.  
*Wallace* took one on the face in his teen,  
 With his good hand, while mouth, nose and een,  
 Through the braith blow, all gushed out of blood deep  
 Grofing to the ground he smote him where he stood  
 The other hit to *Wallace* in that stead,      stood hat  
 For well he weind his fellow had been dead :      the w  
 And he again in grief him gripped sore,  
 While his sprite fail'd, that he might do no more  
 The first freik rose, and smote on *Wallace* fast,  
 Both to the death he brought them at the last.  
 Upon a pillar their brains out he dang,  
 And with his hands out at the door them flang.  
 And said : What devil moved yon Carles at me ;  
 Long time id France I would have let them be.

just well in truth, thus were they done to dead,  
though French-men now likes not thereof to  
I will cease, and put it out of ryme, (read,  
etter it is, who right can look in tyme.

Many great Lords was displeased in France,  
at the good King who knew all the whole chance  
right great despite of Wallace spoken had they,  
all his passed over, while that upon a day :  
was none of them that durst it undertake,  
he had done wrong, or therefore battel make;

## C H A P. III.

*How Wallace flew the Lyon in the Barrace.*  
His Royal Roy an high worship him gave,  
As Conquerour him honoured over the laves,  
fell Lyon this King gart be brought  
Within barrace, for great harm that he wrought,  
arized with yron, and no more power him gave,  
of woodness he exceeded all the lave :  
ut he was fair, and right felon indeed,  
that strong strength he gart men him feed,  
keepe him close from men and bestial :  
Court there dwelt two Squyers of great vail,  
hat cousins were to the Champions tway,  
he which before Wallace hapned to slay,  
band they made in privy conclusion,  
their power to work his confusion,  
any means through fraud and subtilitie,  
ster therefore they car'd not for to die,  
o death or shame, so that they might him bring,  
pon a tyme they went unto the King :  
his Scot, they said, that ye so well fare make,  
sees, nought here but he would undertake,

By his great force to put to confusion,  
Now he desires to fight with your Lyon,  
And bade us ask of you the battel strang,  
Ye grant him leave in the barrace to gang.  
Sadly again to them answered the King :  
Sore me for-thinks he desires such a thing :  
But I will neither for right, nor yet pleasance,  
Deny Wallace what he desires in France.  
Then went they forth, and soon met with Wallace  
A figured tale they told him in that case :  
Wallace, they said, the King desires that ye,  
Direnze battel so cruel for to see,  
And charged you to fight with this Lyon.  
Wallace answered in hasty conclusion :  
And I shal do what be the Kings will,  
At my power, right gladly to fulfil :  
Then passed he unto the King but mair,  
A Lord in Court when he approached there,  
Unwisenly asked without provision :  
Wallace, dare ye go fight with our Loyn.  
And he said : Yea, so the King suffer me,  
Or with your self, if ye ought better be.  
What will ye more ? this thing admitted was,  
That Wallace should unto the Lyon pass.  
The King charged to bring him good harness :  
And he said : Nay, God shield me from such a case,  
I should it take if I fought with a mare ;  
But for a dog that nought of arms can,  
I will have none, but single as I ga :  
A great mantle about his hand can ga,  
A good sword, with him he took no matir,  
Aboundantly in barrace cutted cheirc.

great chains were wroghte in the gate with a gin;  
and pulled too, when Wallace was therein.  
He wood Lyon on Wallace where he stood,  
clamping he Brayed. for he desired blood:  
With his round pollis in the mantle wrought sa,  
short the back good Wallace can him ca,  
With his good sword that was of burnish't steel;  
his body in two it cutted ever each deal.

When to the King he raked in great yre,  
and said on loud: Was this all your desire,  
to ware a Scot this lightly into vain?

There more dogs that ye would yet have flain;  
So, bring them forth, since I must dogs quel,  
To do bidding while that I with you dwel;  
gains me well to graith me in Scotland,  
or greater deeds there men hach tane in hand,  
then with a dog in battel to enchieve;  
At you and France for ever I take leave.

The King perceived that Wallace grieved was,  
so earnestly he asked leave to pass;  
Few'd in his mind that it was hapned so,  
so lewd a deed to let him undergo,  
knowing the worship and the great nobleness  
of him which sprang that time in many place.

Somely he said; It should displease you nought,  
If it desired, it bred never in my thought:  
And by the faith I owe the Crown of France,  
thought never to charge you to such chance;  
But men of bail that asked it for you.

Wallace answered: To God I make a vow,  
liked never in such battel to be in;  
Upon a dog no worship is to win.

The king conceiv'd how this falsehood was wroght by them  
 The Squyers both were to his presence brought; ther  
 Could not deny, when they came him before,  
 All their trespass they told withouten more.  
 The King commanded they should be done to death.  
 Smote off their heads without any remeade.  
 The Champions, lo, for envy causeless,  
 To sudden death, Wallace them broght through.  
 The Squyers als, from their falsness was kend,  
 Envy them brought both to a sudden end.  
 Lords, behold, envy the evil Dragon,  
 In cruel fire he burneth this Region.  
 For whosoever abounds in envy,  
 To some mischief it brings him hastily.  
 Forsake envy, thou shalt the better speed,  
 Hereof as now I will no further reed.  
 But in my matter, as I before began,  
 I shal declare as plainly as I can.

When Wallace saw they had him at envy,  
 Longer to byde he thought not then plainly.  
 Better him thought in Scotland for to be,  
 And adventure take, either to live or die.  
 To help his own he had far more pleasance,  
 Then here to byde with all the wealth in France.  
 Then his whole mind, manhood and courage,  
 Was plainly set to win out of bondage  
 Scotland again from pain and meikle shire,  
 He vowed he should, or else to die therefore.  
 The King hath seen how good Wallace is set,  
 The letter then him gave withouten let,  
 The which of late from Scotland was him send.  
 Wallace it saw, and wel their harms kend:

rogh by the first writ thereto accordial,  
 ghi, them to supply he thought he would not fail.  
 re, Wherefore should I hereof long process make :  
 e. Wallace of France a goodly leave can take.  
 to do the King hath seen that it would not else be,  
 So chamber went, behold him might not he,  
 For great langour, when Wallace can remove :  
 gha The King to him kept ay kindness and love ;  
 nd, Jewels and gold his worship for to save,  
 He bade them give as much as they would have.  
 Lords and Ladies weeped wonder fast,  
 When Wallace there so took his leave and past;  
 No man he took but whom he thither brought;  
 Again with him Long o'veil forth sought.  
 For pain nor bliss, that good knight left him never,  
 For case befel, while death made them disever.  
 Towards the Sluce in goodly feir past he,  
 A vessel got, and made him to the sea ;  
 Eight ship-men hyred, and goodly wage them gave.  
 To Scotland sure, the firth of Tay they have.

## C H A P. I V.

*How Wallace came in Scotland again at the Battle  
of Elchock Park.*

U Pon the right Wallace the land hath tane,  
 At Ernis-mouth, and is to Elchock gane:  
 He gart the ship in covert sail away,  
 So out of sight they were ere it was day.  
 At Elchock dwelt then Wallace cousin dear,  
 That Crawford heght; the house when they com  
 On the back-side Wallace a window fand, (nea  
 And in he called, then Crawford came at hand.

From time he wist that it was good Wallace,  
 Into his barn he ordained them a place :  
 A mow of corn he builded them about,  
 And clos'd it well, none might perceive thereon  
 But at one place where meat was to them brought  
 And bedding too, as goodly as he mought.  
 Unto the water, whereof Wallace was glad,  
 A dene hole forth on the North side they had.  
 Four dayes or five in rest sojourned there,  
 While meat was gone, Crawford bowned for  
 To Saint Johnstoun their purveyance to buy :  
 Englishmen thought he took more abundantly,  
 Then he was wont in any time before,  
 They have him tane, and put in prison sore ;  
 What guests he had, to tell made him request.  
 He said : It was but to a Kirking feast.  
 Yet they presumed the coming of Wallace,  
 Knowledge to get they set a subtil case ;  
 They let him pass with thing that he had bought,  
 Then after soon in all the haste they mought,  
 To harness yeed the power of the town,  
 Eight hundred men with Butler made them bowe,  
 Follow'd on dreigh, while that this man came hamond  
 Wallace him saw, and said : He served blame :  
 In my sleeping a fell vision me told,  
 Tell Englishmen that thou should me have sold.  
 Crawford said : He had been tormented sair  
 With Englishmen that put him to despair :  
 Therefore rise up, and soon some succour see,  
 I dread full sore they set watches on me.  
 The worthy Scots gaithed them in good speed,  
 Their weapons took, then from that house they yede

Thus

thus suddenly fel Sutheron they saw :  
 so few they were to fight against them aw  
 hat keenly came with young Butler the knight,  
 when Wallace said : In plain lands is not right,  
 at Elchock Park that is near here beside,  
 the first sullic we think there to abyde.  
 nineteen they were, and Crawford with good will  
 the twentiech man, the number to fulfil.  
 the Park they took where Wallace's plice hath seen  
 of great holm, that grew both high and green :  
 with thortor trees a manner of strength made he,  
 where they were won, they thought to gar fel die.  
 the wood was thick but little of breadth & length  
 and they had meat, they thoghte to hold the strengh.  
 the Englishmen then past to Crawford place,  
 found in the barn the lodging of Wallace :  
 when Crawfords wife in hands soon have they tane,  
 and asked at her, what way the Scots were gane ?  
 bright welthey rowed that Wallace shold therewe  
 from France to Tay, he was come through the sea  
 he would not tell for boast, nor yet reward,  
 when Butler said : over long thou hast been spar'd,  
 and gart them big a full broad burning fire,  
 herewith he grew in matalent and yre :  
 the Sutheron swore, therein she should burnt be ;  
 when Wallace said : She shal not end for me :  
 great sin it were yon sakeless wight to slay,  
 she should end, in faith there shal die me :  
 best the strengh, and the plain field can ta,  
 in loud he cryed, and said : Lo, here thy fa :  
 thinks thou not shame for to torment a wyfe,  
 come forth to me, and make end of our stryfe.

Fra Butler had on field good Wallace seen,  
For old malice he wox near wood for teen;  
Upon the Scots they shup all with great main,  
Good Wallace soon the strength he took again,  
A fell bicker the Englishmen began,  
Assailed sore with many cruel man :  
But they within were noble of defence,  
Made great debate with force and violence.  
At their entry fifteen they put to dead,  
Then all the rest removed from that stead :  
Yeed to array again to sailie new.

Wallace beheld, which well in war him knew,  
Fellows, he said, again all at this place,  
They will not fail : but thus stands the case,  
Yon Knight thinks for to divide his men  
In seir places, the sooth ye shal well ken,  
Again on us to prove how it may be,  
As now behoves some other way to see:  
Contrare their might a good defence to make.  
Now Longueil thou shalt fix with thee take,  
William mine Eme as many with you go,  
And five with me, as now we have no mo.  
Knight Butler then parted his men in three :  
Wallace vifid where Butler shup to be,  
Thither then past that entry for to wear,  
Which side they did assailie with great fear.  
Wallace let part on the entry begin,  
But none went out that on the Scots came in.  
Seven foremost was that in the front first yeed.  
Wallace five men that doughty were indeed,  
Each one slew one, and Wallace gart two die :  
Butler was nevir, and laid : This will not be.

Aback he drew, and let his courage flake,  
 The worthy Scots proved well for Scotland's sake.  
 Good Longoveil his counter made so sore,  
 And Crawford als, they sailied them no more.  
 Right near by then approached the dark night,  
 And stars to appear began into their sight.  
 Sutherland set watches, and to their supper went,  
 The Butler was sore grieved in his intent,  
 Yet fure they well of good stuff, ale and bread,  
 Wallace and his, they wist of no remeade,  
 But cold water that ran out through a strand,  
 In that lodging none other food they fand.  
 Then Wallace said : Good fellows, think not long,  
 Will God, we shal be soon out of this chrong,  
 Suppose we fast a day or yet a night,  
 Take all in thank this pain for Scotland's right.  
 The Earl of York was in Saint Johnstoun still,  
 To Butler sent, and bade him bide at will.  
 To him full soon there should come new power,  
 And als himself, this told the Messenger.  
 Butler would fain that Wallace had yeelden been,  
 Ere the Earl came, and for this cause was seen,  
 His goodlyre and his father both he slew,  
 The knight therewith toward the Park him drew,  
 What chear they made, upon the Scots he call'd.  
 Then Wallace said : Far better then thou wald.  
 The Butler said : I would fain speak with thee,  
 Then Wallace said : Thou mayst for little fee,  
 Wallace, he said, thou hast done me great saith  
 My father and my goodlyre thou slew baith.  
 Then Wallace said : For that state thou art in,  
 It were my debt for to undo thy kin :

And I think als, as God of heaven me save,  
 That my two hands shal graith thee to thy grave.  
 Then *Butler* laid : That is not likely now,  
 But we thee have, we shall gar sydes sow,  
 Of this I ask, and thou would make me grant,  
 What I thee heght, that thing thou shalt not want  
 Say forth, quoth he, be thy desire reasonable.  
 I shal it granz withoutten any fable.

The *Butler* laid : *Wallace*, thou knowes right,  
 Thou may not scape by power nor by flight:  
 And since thou sees it may no better be,  
 For thy gentrice thou would thee yeeld to me,  
 Then *Wallace* said : thy will unskilful is,  
 Thou would me do which is over hie a miss :  
 Yeilden I am to better, I can prove.

To whom? he asked, To the great God above,  
 For ever each day, since I had wit of man :  
 Before my work, to yeeld me I began,  
 And als at night when that I sailed light,  
 I me betraught to the Maker of micht.

That *Butler* said : Me thinks thou hast done well,  
 Yet of one thing, I pray thee, let me feel :  
 For thy manhood this to me manifest,  
 When thou sees thou mayst no longer last,  
 On this each place which I have tane to wear,  
 That thou come forth, and all other forbear.

Then *Wallace* leugh at his cruel desire,  
 And said : I shal, though thou were wood as fire,  
 And all England the contrary had sworn,  
 Ithal come out thereat each place the morn,  
 Or else this night, trust wel that I thee say :  
 Abide not here till nine hours of the day.

Butler sent forth the chake-watch on the sides,  
that each place boldly he bowned to byde a  
bus stil they bode while day began to gear,  
thick mist fel, the Planet was not clear.

Wallace assayed all that place about,  
want like as he would at an some place brake out.  
While Butler's men away from him could go,  
to helpe the lave; when thay saw it was so:  
Wallace and his fast sped them to that stead,  
Where Butler bode feil men they brought to dead  
he worthy Scots soon passed through that melie,  
Crawfurd therewith was sore hurt on the knee;  
at earth he was, good Wallace turned again,  
and at one straik the Butler hath he slain.  
Unt up that man under his arm so strong,  
Defending him out that felon throng.  
Good rowm he made amongst them where he goes  
With his right hand he slew five of his foes;  
ure out Crawfurd by force of his person,  
line aker broad ere ever he set him down.

The Sutheron found that their Chiflain was dead,  
embled him about, but then was no remead;  
Thirty with him of the wightest he brought,  
Dead on that place, wherat the Scots out sought.  
Wallace and his by then was from their sight,  
Sutheron bode stil for great los of that knight;  
The mist was mirk, that Wallace lyked wel,  
himself was glad, and said to Longoveit;  
At Methven-wood is my desire to be,  
for there is bestial to get in great plentie;  
By then they were wel come unto the hight;  
The mist flasked, the sun shin'd fair and bright;

Soon were they ware, a little space them by,  
Of four and thirty in a company.

Then *VWallace* said, Be yon men friends or fo,  
We will them see, since that they are no mo.

When they came near, a noble Knight it was,  
The which to name heght Sir *Hew of Dundass*,  
And Sir *John Scot*, a wise and worthy Knight,  
Into *Strathern* a man of meikle might :

For there he had great part of heritage :  
*Dundass* sister he had in marriage.

Passing they were, and might no longer leſt,  
To *Engliſhmen* their fewty for to feſt.

The Lord of *Brechin* ſuch comand had them mad  
Of King *Edward* to hold their lands brade.

But fra they ſaw that it was wight *VWallace*,  
Held up their hands, and thanked God of grac  
Of his great help which he had ſent him there :  
To *Methwen* wood with one aſſent they fare,  
Soon got them meat of beſtial that they fand,

Refted that day : when night was come on han  
To *Birrane* wood but reſting are they gane,  
Where they have found the Squyer good *Ruthwaſe*  
In out law use he had long liued there,

Of beſtial while he might get no mair.

They tarried not, but into *Athole* yeed, (drea  
Where meat was scant, there *VWallace* had grea  
Passed to *Lorn*, right little found they there,  
Of wild and tame that Countrey was made bare  
But in the ſtrengths, there food was leaved none  
These worthy *Scots* then made a piteous moan,  
Sir *John Scot* ſaid, He had far rather die  
Into good name, and leave his heirs free,

Then for to byde as bound in subjection.

When Wallace saw these good men of renown,  
With hunger stadt, almost might live no more,  
Wit ye for them he sighed wonder sore.

Good men, he said, I am the cause of this,

At your desire, I shal amend this miss,

Or leave you free some chevance for to ma.

All him alone he bowned for to ga :

Prayed them byde while he might come again;

Out over an hill he passed into plain.

Out of their sight into a Forest side,

He set him down under an oak to byde.

His bow and sword he leaned to a tree,

In anguish great on grouf then turned he :

This piteous moan was for his men so wrought,

That of himself little thing he then rought.

O wretch ! he said, that never could be content

Of over great might that the great God thee lent

But thy fierce minde, wilful and variable,

With great Lordship, thou couldst not so byd

And wilful wit, for to make *Scotland* free: (stab)

God lykes not that which I have tane on me :

For worthier then I of birth was born,

Through my desire for hunger are forlorn:

I ask at God them to restore again :

I am the cause, I should have all the pain,

While studying thus while flying with himself,

While at the last upon a sleep he fell,

Three dayes before there had him followed five

The which was bound, or else to lose their live :

The Earl of York bade them so great guardoun,

That they by thist thought to put Wallace dow

Three of them was born men of *England*,  
 And two was *Scots* that took the deed on hand:  
 And some meo said, the third brother betrayed,  
*Kildromy cast*, where great sorrow was raised.  
 A chyld they had which used to bear meat,  
 In wilderness amongst the mountains great;  
 They had all seen the disleverance of *Wallace*,  
 From his good men, and where he bode on chase,  
 Amongst the thick wood, in covert held them law,  
 While they perceivred he could on sleeping faw,  
 And these five approached *Wallace* near;  
 What's best to do? at other fast they spier.  
 One man said thus: It were an high renown,  
 And we might lead him quick to *Saint Johnstone*.  
 Lo, how he lyes, we may our grips wail,  
 Of his weapons he shal have none avail;  
 We shal him bind in contrare of his wil,  
 And lead him thus on back-side of yon hil,  
 So that his men shal nothing of him knew.  
 The other four assented to that saw;  
 And then these five made them unto *Wallace*,  
 And thought through force to bind him in that place  
 What? crow'd these men for to hold *Wallace* down?  
 The manliest man, the starker of person,  
 Living he was, als stood into such right,  
 We trust great God his deeds hath in sight.  
 They gripped him, and out of sleep be braid:  
 What meaneth this? then sadly *Wallace* said.  
 About be turned, and up his arms thrang,  
 On these traitours with knightly force he daug;  
 The starker man into his hands hinc he,  
 And all his brains he dang out on a tree.

His sword he got soon after that he rose,  
 Champion-like amongst the four he goes :  
 Ever a man he gare die at a dñe : (Aint)  
 When two were dead, the other three would not  
 Made them to flee, but then it was no boor :  
 Ness none living might pass from him on foot.  
 He followed fast, and soon to death them broght,  
 Then to the chyld sadly again he sought.  
 What didst thou here ? the child with a pale face,  
 On knees did fal, and asked *Wallace* grace :  
 With them I was, & knew nothing their thought,  
 Into service, as they me bade, I wrought.  
 What bearest thou there ? but meat the chyld can  
 Go take it up, and pass with me away. (say.)  
 Meat in this time is far better then gold.  
*Wallace* and he forth founded on the fold.  
 Who brought *Wallace* from his enemies bold ?  
 Who but great God that hath this world so hold  
 He was his help in many fellon thrang.  
 With glad chear thus unto *Ern* can he gang.  
 Both softed flesh there was, als bread and cheese,  
 To succour them that were in point to liese :  
 And he it deals to four men and fiftie,  
 Which had before fasted over dayes three :  
 Then took his part, he had fasted as long.  
 Where heard ye ever any in such a throng,  
 In hunger so sleeping, and weaponless,  
 So well recovered as *Wallace* did in case ?  
 Mainly force vanquisht his enemies five :  
 Men of wit this question will descrive.  
 Withouten gloze, I will tell forth my tale,  
 How came this meat, this fellowship asked haist ?

To

To their desire Wallace no answer yold,  
 VVhere five were dead, he led them forth & tol  
 Greatly displeased was all the Chevalrie,  
 To a Chiftain they held it fantasie  
 To walk alone. Wallace with sober mood,  
 Said, Hereof hath come nothing now but goo  
 To the low-land again full fast they sought,  
 Askt at the child, if he could wish them ought,  
 VVhere they might best of purveyance for tow  
 Of none, he said, was this Countrey within,  
 Nor all about, in as far as I knaw,  
 While that ye come down to the Rannoch haw.  
 That Lord hath stuff, both ale, bread and verna  
 Of King Edward he takes full meikle wage.  
 Then Wallace said, My self shal be your guide  
 I know that stead about on either side :  
 Through the wild land he guided them full right  
 To Rannoch hall he brought them that same nig  
 A watch was set, and that full soon they ta,  
 He was a Scot, yet would he not him sla,  
 But gart him tell the manner of that place :  
 Thus entred they within a little space :  
 The gate they wan, for Castle there was none,  
 But mood-wall wight, withouten lime or ston  
 Wallace in haste strake up the chamber door  
 With his right foot, that stalwart was and stour  
 Then they within awaked suddenly,  
 The Lord got up, and mercy can he cry.  
 Fra time he wist that good Wallace was there,  
 He thanked God, then said these words mair :  
 True man I was, and win against my will  
 With Englishmen, suppose I like it ill :

All Scots we are that in this house are now,  
At your command all boldly shal we bow.

Of our Nation good Wallace had great pitie;  
Took oaths of them, and then meat asked he:

Good chear they made while day-light on the  
This trae man soon sembled him beforne. (morn,  
Three sons he had that stalwart were and bold,  
And twenty men of kin in his housshould.

Wallace was blyth they made him some supply:  
Said, I thank God, that we thus multiply.

All that day over in good liking they rest,  
Watches they choose to keep them that could best  
Upon the morn, the light day when he saw,  
Then Wallace said, Our power for to know  
We will take field, and up our banner raise,  
In right of Scotland, and contrare of our faes.  
We will no more now us in covert hide,  
Power to us will semble on each side.

Then horse they got, the best that could be there,  
Towards Dunkeld the gainest way they fare.  
The Bishop then got him to Saint Johnstoun,  
The Scots flew that were of that Nation,  
Both poor and rich, and servans that they fand,  
Left none alive that was born of England.

The place they took, and made them well to fare,  
Of purveyance that Bishop had brought there.

Jewels they got, both gold and silver bright,  
With good chear there five days sojourned right:  
On the sixt day Wallace to counsel went,  
Gart call the best, and show'd them his intent:  
No men we have to assault Saint Johnstoun,  
Into the North therefore let us make bown:

In Ross, ye know, good men a strength hath made  
 Hear they of us, they come withouten bade :  
 Als into Bute is good Bishop Sinkler,  
 Fra he got wot, he comes withouten mair.  
 Good west-land men of Arrane and Rouchlie,  
 Fra they be warned, they will all come to me.  
 This purpose took, and in the North they ride,  
 No Englishmen durst in their get abide.  
 Whom Wallace took, they knew the old ransome  
 Fra he came home, to flee they made them bowe  
 And Scots-men scembled to Wallace fast,  
 In awful fear out through the land they past.  
 Strengths were left, wot ye, all desolate,  
 Against these folk no man durst make debate :  
 In arrayed battel they rode to Aberdene,  
 In whole number seven thousand then were seen  
 But Englishmen had left the town all waste,  
 On ever each side away aben can they hause,  
 In all the land left neither more nor less,  
 Lord BeWmont took the sea at Buchan-ness,  
 Through Scotland then was manifest in plain,  
 The Lords that fled, in heart was wonder fain.  
 The Knight Clement of Ross came suddenly  
 In Murray land with their good Chevalry.  
 The house of Narn that good Knight well hatte  
 Slew the Captain, and good men many aye. (canc)  
 Out of Murray and Buchan land came they,  
 To seek BeWmont, but he was past away.  
 Then those good men to Wallace passed right.  
 When Wallace saw sir John Ramsay the Knight,  
 And other good that had been from him long,  
 Great courage then was raised them among.

the land he ruled as that him liked best, (rest.  
to Saint Johnstoun then rode ere they would

*The siege of Saint Johnstoun.*

At every port a stalwart watch he made,  
Confirmed a siege, and stedfastly abade.  
Bishop Sinkler in all good haste him dight,  
Came out of Bute with seemly men in sight ;  
Out of the Yles of Raunchly and Arrane,  
Lindsay and Boyd, with good men many ane :  
Adam Wallace Baron of Richartown,  
Will sadly sought to Wallace of renown.  
At Saint Johnstoun bade at the sailie still,  
Or Sutheron men they might well pass at will ;  
Or in their way there durst no enemy be,  
But fled away by land, and eke by sea.  
About the town thus tembled they but more,  
Or they had been with good Wallace before.  
Town, Lawder, good Richard of Lundie,  
In a good barge they past about by sea :  
At S. Johnstoun haven their ankers have thy set,  
Two English shipp they took withouten let ;  
The one they burnt, and stufed the other well  
With attaile, and stalwart men in steel,  
To keep the port, there should come no victual  
To the town, nor men that might avail.  
From South and North many from Scotland fled,  
Left Castles waste, feil left their lives in wed.  
The Sutheron Bishop that before left Dunkel,  
To London past, and told Edward him sel.  
Scotland there had fallen a great mischance ;  
When leant he soon for Aymer the Wallance,

And

And asked him, What then was best to do ?  
 He heght to pass, and take great gold thereto,  
 Into Scotland, some means there to make  
 Against Wallace, on hand thus can he take.  
 He said, he would undo King Edwards Crown,  
 Except he might through treason put him down.  
 King Edward heght what thing that Wallace  
 He should it keep, thereto he gave his hand. (ban  
 Vallange took leave, and into Scotland went,  
 To Bothwel came, then cast in his intent,  
 What man there was might Vallace best beguile  
 And soon he found within a little while,  
 Sir John Menteith that Wallace Gossip was,  
 A messenger sir Aymer bath gart pass :  
 At Ruglin Kirk these two together met,  
 Him to betray the barnage there was let.  
 Then Vallange said, sir John thou knowest th  
 Vallace again riseth contrare the King, (thing E  
 And thou mayst have what Lordship thou wilt wa  
 And thou wouldest work as I would thee counse  
 Yon tyrant holds the Realms at trouble baith.  
 To thrifcy men it doth ful meikle skaith :  
 He trusteth thee, thou mayst ful wel him take,  
 Of this matter, I rede an end thou make.  
 Were he away, we might at liking reign  
 All as Lords, and live under the King.  
 Then Menteith said : He is our Governour,  
 For us he bode in many fellow stour,  
 Not for himself, but for our heritage,  
 To sell him thus, it were a great outrage.  
 Then Vallange said : And thou well understand,  
 Great merit it were, he spilt so muchie blood.

f Christen men, putteth souls in peril,  
 to, bind me als he shal be holden hale,  
 for his life, and kept into prison,  
 Edward would have him in subjection :  
 en, when Menteith thought, so they wold keep cunnand,  
 en, we would ful fain have had him off Scotland.  
 ange, Wallange saw him in a study be,  
 ban three thousand pound of fine gold let him see,  
 t, and heght he should the Lennox have at will,  
 us treasonably Menteith granted theretil.  
 guiln obligation with his own hand he made,  
 hen took the gold, and Edwards seal so brades,  
 d gave them his when he his time might see,  
 take Wallace, over Sulway give him free  
 Englishmen : by this treasonable concord,  
 John should be of all the Lennox Lord.  
 thous Wallace should in England kepted be,  
 hing Edward might make Scotland to him free.  
 wære covetise was over great master seen,  
 set: one example takes how another hath been.  
 r covetise puts in pains strong and fell :  
 r covetise the serpent is in hell :  
 e, r covetise good Hector took the dead :  
 r covetise there can be no remead ;  
 rongh covetise good Alexander was lost,  
 Julius als for all his reif and boast.  
 rongh covetise died Aribur of Britaine ;  
 covetise there hath died many ane.  
 covetise the traitor Ganillion,  
 flowre of France he put to confusyon,  
 od, covetise they poysoned Goutfray  
 Antioch, as the Author will say.

For covetise Menteith upon the false wise,  
 Betrayed Wallace who was his Gossop thrise,  
 Wallange in h[is] ste with blych will and good heart  
 To London past, and shewed it to Edward;  
 Of their contract they had far more pleasance,  
 Then of fine gold given in the ballance,  
 Of greater weight then his ransome might be.  
 Of Wallace forth yet speak some part will we.

At Saint Johnstoun yet was the siedging still,  
 In a morning the Sutheron with good will,  
 Five hundred men in arms right egerly,  
 They issued forth to make a jeopardie,  
 At the South port upon Scot and Dundass,  
 Who in their time right wise and worthy was;  
 Against their foes right sharply fought and sore,  
 In that Counter seven score to death they bore  
 Yet Englishmen that cruel were and keen,  
 Full derty fought, where doughty deeds were seen  
 From the West side drove all the Scots hail  
 To the fighters. When they saw nought avail,  
 But in again full fast they can them speed;  
 The Knight Dundass ful doughty proved indeed  
 Over neare the gate ful bandonly he bade,  
 With a good sword ful great mastry he made,  
 Nought knowing wel his fellowes were him firs,  
 In at the gate the Sutheron can him ta;  
 Unto the Earl they led him hastilie;  
 When he him saw, he said he should not die,  
 To slay this one it may us little remeade.  
 He sent him forth to Wallace in that stead.  
 Unto the Noch his baetels hatch he broughte;  
 While he him saw, naf this he wist right doughty

ent to the Earl, and thanked him largely,  
leight for to quite when he such cause might see:  
art, but yet therefore forsworne he would not grant,  
ough they were yealden, and come recryant.  
e, or gold nor good he would no tribute take,  
great assault then they began to make.

The Earl of Fyfe dwelt under crews long  
of King Edward, and then he thought it wrong,  
hat Wallace so was fiedging Saint Johnstone,  
if he come in right help of the Crown.

No Englishmen he would not keep that band,  
hen came he soon with good men of the land.  
nd John Vallance was then Sheriff of Fyfe,  
Wallace past, and steked him in that stryfe.

ore, the Earl was come of good true noble blood.

ore of the old Thane, which in his time was good.

hen all about to Saint Johnstone they gang,

see the felon fault was hideous and strang.

and fel faggots into the dyke they cast,  
il, other and bay about the stakes they fast:

With trees and earth a great passage they made,  
out over the wals they yeed in battell braid:

The Sutheron then made great defence again,  
while at the walls there was a thousand slain.

Wallace and his yeed rayed in battell right,  
Sutheron men derly to death they dight:  
Save the Earl Wallace the Herald send,  
God Iop himself the which before him kende:

At Dundas's lake he laid, he should not die,

Wallace himself thus ordained for to be,

Small Hackney to him he gart betake,  
ougher and gold his charges far to make,

Set on his cloak a token for to see,  
A Lyon in wax that should his conduct be:  
Conveyed him forth, and no man him withal;  
Women and bairns, Wallace gart free them all.  
And then he cryed: True Scots to their own.  
Plenisht the land which long had been overthrown.  
Then Wallace past the South-land for to see,  
*Edward the Bruce* in his tyme right worthy,  
That year before he had in *Ireland* been,  
And therewith him were cruel men and keen;  
Fiftie in feir were of his mothers kin:  
At Kirkubright in Galloway entred in,  
Witch these fifty he had vanquisht nine score;  
And then past withouten tarry more,  
To Wigton soon, and that Castle hath tane,  
*Sutherland* were fled, and left it all alone:  
Wallace him met with true men reverently,  
To Lochmabane went all that Chevalry:  
They made Edward both Lord and leader there,  
This condition Wallace made him but mair.  
But a short time to byde *Robert the King*,  
If he came not in this Region to regin,  
That Edward should receive the Crown but fail,  
This heigh't Wallace, and all the barnage hail:  
In Lochmabane Prince Edward leined stil,  
And Wallace past to Cumnock with good wil:  
At the Black bog where he had wont to be,  
Upon that stead a Royal house held he.  
English Wardens to London past but mair,  
And told the King of all their great misfare:  
Now Wallace can Scotland from him reduce,  
And how he had received *Edward Bruce*.

the commons swore they should comenever make  
pon Scotland, and Wallace living were.  
hen Edward wrote to Menteith privily,  
ayed to haste, the time was passed by  
f the promises to which he was bounden,  
John Menteith into his wit hath founden;  
ow he should best his purpose to fulfil,  
is sisters son in haste he calted him cill,  
nd ordained him in dwelling with Wallace;  
n oath again he gart him make on case,  
hat time he wist Wallace in quye draw,  
should him warn, what aventure might faw.  
his man granted that such thing should be done;  
ith Wallace thus he was in service soOn:  
of creation, Wallace had little thought:  
s laborous minde on other matters wrought.  
us Wallace thrice hath made all Scotland free,  
en he desired in lasting peace to be:  
ere was of wear he was in some part irk,  
purposed to serve God and the Kirk,  
d for to live under his righteous King,  
at he desired above all earthly thing.

## C H A P . V.

Wallace was betrayed by sir John Menteith, &  
had in England, and was martyred there.

He Herauld 7op in England soon he send,  
And wrote to Bruce right heartly his commend  
eeching him to come and take his Crown,  
ne should gainstand, Clerk, Burges, nor Barron;  
Herauld past, when Bruce saw his creedance,  
erof he took no perfise great pleasance.

With his own hand again wrote to Wallace,  
And thanked him of lawty and kindness,  
Beseeching him this matter to conceal,  
For him behoved out of England to steal.  
For long before was kepted the ragment,  
Which Cumming had to byde the Parliament  
Into London, and if they him accuse,  
To come from them he would have some excuse.  
He prayed Wallace on Glasgow mure to wake,  
The nexte first night of July for his sake,  
And bade he should but into quyet be,  
For he with him might bring few Chevalry :  
Wallace was blyth when he this wryting saw,  
His household soon he gart to Glasgow draw.  
That moneth there he ordained them to byde :  
Keirly he took each night with him to ryde,  
And this young man that Monteith to him sende  
Wist none but they what way that Wallace wend :  
The which gart warn his Emme the eighteen nighthe :  
Sixty full soon Sir John Monteith gart dight,  
Of his own kin and allays was born,  
To his treason he gart them all be sworn :  
From Dumbarton they sped them hastily,  
Neat Glasgow Kirk they busked privily.  
VVallace past forth where that the tryst was set,  
A spy they made, and followed him but let.  
Robreston was near the way beside,  
And but one house where VVallace used to byd  
He woke on foot while passed was midnight,  
Keirly and he then for a sleep them dight :  
They bade this man that he shuld wake his peple  
And waken VVallace, came men from any nite.

When they sleeped the traytour took good heed ;  
 He met his Eme, and bade him have no dread,  
 In sleep he was, and with him but one man,  
 Let may him have for any craft he can :  
 Without the house their weapons laid them fra,  
 For wel they wist got *Wallace* one of tha,  
 And on his feet, his ransome should be sold ;  
 Thus sembled they about that feeble hold,  
 His traytour watch from *Wallace* then he stakk,  
 Both knife and sword, his bow and arrows all.  
 After midnight in hands they have him tane,  
 Umbred on sleep, no man with him but ane.  
 Fairly they took and led him from that place,  
 And him to death withouten longer space.  
 They thought to bind *Wallace* with strengths strong  
 On foot he got these fell traytours among :  
 And he gripped about, but no weapons he fand,  
 And with a stool that did beside him stand,  
 Against the back of one he bursted in the thrang.  
 And of another the harns ouer he dang,  
 And als many as hands could on him lay,  
 To force him hint, for to have him away.  
 But that power on foot might not him lead  
 Out of that house while they or he were dead.  
 Set, at *John* saw wel by force it might not be,  
 Were he were tane rather he thought to die :  
 Sentence bade cease, and then spake to *Wallace*,  
 By god show'd him forth a ful right subtil case :  
 We have so long here used you alone,  
 While wit thereof is into *England* gone,  
 Therefore hear me, and sober your couraige,  
 And the *Englishmen* with a ful great barnage,

Are sembled here, and set this house about,  
That ye by force on no wise can win out,  
Suppose ye had the strength of good *Hector*,  
Amongst the Host ye may not long endure :  
And they you take, in haste your death is dight,  
I have spoken with Lord *Clifford* that Knight,  
Their Chiftain is, and wel meaneed for your lyfe  
They ask no more but be quite of your stryfe ;  
To Dumbartane ye shal pass forth with me,  
Then in your house ye may in safety be.  
*Sutherland* such use with *Menteith* long had they  
That *Wallace* trowed some part that he woulde  
*Menteith* said : Sir, lo, weapons none we have,  
We con e in traist, your lyfe if we might save.  
*Wallace* trowed wel, and he his *Gossep* thrise,  
That he would nought by no manner of wise  
Him to betray, for all *Scotland* so wyde :  
An oath of him he asked in that tyde.  
There wanted wit, what should his oaths more  
Forsworn to him he was long time before.  
The oath he made, *Wallace* came in his wil,  
Right fraudfully all thus he show'd him til.  
*Gossep*, he said, as prisoner they must you see,  
Or else through force they wil take you from me  
A courch with slight upon his hands they laid,  
And under then with sicker cords they braid,  
Both sharp and teugh, and fast together drew.  
*Alice*, the *Bruce* might sore that binding rew,  
Which made *Scotland* soon broken upon tale,  
By *Cummings* death, and loss of good *Wallace*.  
They led him forth in feir amongst them aw :  
Keirly be mist, and then the *Sutherland* saw,

Then wist he wel that he betrayed was,  
 Toward the South with him when they can pals;  
 Yet they him said: In truth he should not die,  
 King Edward would keep him in good safety,  
 For the honour of war that he had wrought:  
 But the sore bands so troubled all his thought,  
 Credence thereto forsooth he could not give,  
 That he wist wel they would not let him live.  
 A false foul case that Menteith hath him sold,  
 When on this wise good Wallace he was cal'd,  
 Some men sayes, it was to save his Lord,  
 They lied all out that made that false record:  
 At the Fawkirk the good Stewart was slain,  
 Our Chronicles rehearses that in plain,  
 On Magdalene day the eighteenth year before,  
 Cummings death therefore it witnesseth more;  
 And at Restoun Wallace was treasonably  
 Thus fally stoln from his good Chevalry,  
 In Glasgow lay, and wist not of this thing,  
 Thus was he lost, in byding of his King.  
 South they him led, ay holding the west land,  
 Delivered him in haste over Sulway sand.  
 The Lord Clifford and Wallace took him there,  
 To Carlile town ful fast with him they fare;  
 In prison him set, that was a great dolour:  
 That house after they called Wallace tower.  
 Some men then said that knew not wel the case,  
 In Barwick town to death they put Wallace:  
 Contrare is known by this opinion,  
 That Sutherland men had not then Barwick town,  
 To Scotland free it was til Soulis it gave,  
 For Lord Cumming to England with the lave?

Another point is, the traytors durst not pass,  
 That sold him so, where Scots-men master was,  
 The third point is, the commons of *England*,  
 What they deny they will not understand :  
 That thing be done, for witness that may be,  
 Nor credence give further then they may see.  
 To see him die, *Edward* had more desire,  
 Then to be Lord of all the whole Empyre,  
 And for this cause they kepted him so lang,  
 While the commons might unto *London* gang.

**A**lace, *Scotland*, to whom shal thou complain?  
**A**lace, from pain who can thee now refrain?  
**A**lace, thine help is falsly brought to ground :  
 Thy best Chifchain in braith bands is bound.  
**A**lace, thou hast now lost thy guyde of light,  
**A**lace, who shal defend thee in thy sight ?  
**A**lace, thy pain approacheth wonder near.  
 With sorrow soon thou must be left on *Resr.*  
 Thy gracious guyde, thy greatest Gouvernour.  
**A**lace, over near hath come thy fatal hour.  
**A**lace, who shal now beft thee of thy bail ?  
**A**lace, when shal of harms thou be bail ?  
 Who shal defend ? who shal thee now make free ?  
**A**lace, in war, who shal thine helper be ?  
 Who shal thee keep ? who shal thee now redeem ?  
**A**lace, who shal the *Saxons* from thee fleem ?  
 I can no more but beseech God of grace,  
 Thee to restore in haste to wealth and peace.  
 So good *Wallace* may succour thee no mair,  
 The loss of him increaseth meikle care.  
 Now of his men in *Glasgow* still they lay :

What sorrow raise when they mist him away ;  
 The cruel pain, the woful complaining,  
 Whereof to tell it were an heavy thing :  
 Will let be, and speak of him no man :  
 Little rehearse is over meikle care,  
 And principally where redemption is none,  
 Helps not to tell their piteous moan :  
 The death thereof is yet in remembrance,  
 Will let staik of sorrow the ballance.

At Longueil to Lochmabane can pass,  
 And there heght he where good Prince Edward  
 Out of Scotland he should pass never more, (was  
 Sons of Wallace sought to his heart full sore ;  
 The Realm of France he vowed never to see,  
 At revenge Wallace, or else therefore to die.  
 There he remained while coming of the King ;  
 With Bruce in war this good Knight forth did ring :  
 Remembrance since is in the Bruce's book,  
 Second he was when they Saint Johnstone took,  
 Followed the King at winning of the town,  
 The Bruce therefore gave him full great guardourna  
 All Charsis land the good King to him gave,  
 Charsis since then of him are come the lave.  
 Whereto should I far in this story wend,  
 But of my book to make a final end.

*R*obert the Bruce came home on the thrid day  
 In Scotland, after that Wallace was away,  
 To Lockmabane; where he found good Edward,  
 Whereof he was greatly rejoiced in heart ;  
 But fra he wist Wallace away was led,  
 Wha somikle ball into his breast was bred.

N  
O  
N  
H  
H  
O  
H  
R  
N  
W  
B  
F  
U  
B  
T  
A  
B  
G  
C  
O  
M  
H  
I  
T  
H  
T  
W  
T  
C  
T  
V

Near off his wit he worshed for that deed :  
*Edward* full soon then to his brother yeed.  
 A sudden chance this was in wo from weal,  
 Good *Edward* saith, This helpeth not a deal :  
 Let mourning be, it may be no remeade :  
 Ye have him tint, ye should revenge his dead :  
 But for your cause he took the wars in hand,  
 In your defence, and thrice hath fred *Scotland*,  
 The which was lost from us and all our kin,  
 Were not *Wallace*, we had never entred in.  
 Mirrour he was of lawty and manhead ?  
 In wars the best that ever power shall lead :  
 Had he liked for to have tane the Crown,  
 Would none him let that is in this Region.  
 Had not been he, ye should had none entress  
 Into this Realm, for treason and falseness.  
 That shall ye see : the traitour that him sold,  
 From you he thinks *Dumbarton* for to hold.  
 Some comfort take, and let slak of this sorrow,  
 The King charged *Edward* on the morrow,  
 Redresse to take of wrong that wrought him wai.  
 To *Dalwyntoun* he ordained him to passe,  
 And men of arms, if they found *Cumming* there,  
 Put him to death, for no dread they would spare.  
 They found him not, the King him after slew.  
 Into *Dumfries*, where witnesses were anew ;  
 That hapned wrong, over great haste in a King :  
 To work by law, it may skatch little thing.  
 I need not here no further for to shaw  
 How that was done, is known to you aw.  
 But young *Douglas* first to the King can passe,  
 In all his war chas wight and worthy was ;

Nor how the King hath tane on him the Crown,  
Of all that here I make but short mention:  
Nor how Lord *Sousiss*. gave *Barwick* town away,  
How after soon als tint was *Galloway*.

How *John of Lorn* against his right King rose,  
On either side how *Bruce* had many foes.  
How bold *Brechin* contrare the King could ride,  
Right few was then in wear with him to bide.  
Nor how the North was given from the good king  
Which made him long in painfull war to reign;  
But true to him was *James the good Douglas*,  
For *Bruces* right bode well in many place.  
Under the King he was the best Chiftain:  
But *Wallace* I set a Chiftain him alone,  
Therefore to him is no comparison,  
As of one man, save reverence of the Crown.  
But so many as of the *Douglas* hath been,  
Good of one thing was never in *Scotland* seen.  
Comparisons I cannot well declare,  
Of *Bruces* book, as now I speak no mair.  
Mister *John Barbour* which was a cunning Clark,  
Hath of the *Bruce* said miekle in his wark:  
In this matter I am prolix almaist,  
To my purpose briefly I will me haste,  
How good *Wallace* was set amongst his foes,  
To *London* with him *Cliffard* and *Vallance* goes.  
Where King *Edward* was right fain of that fang:  
They have him set fast in a prison strang.  
Of *Wallace* end my self would leave for dread  
To say the worst, but righteousness me lead.  
We find his life was als so very true,  
His fatal hour I will not feinzie now:

Menteith him sold, and that over well was known  
Feil of that kin in Scotland then was sown.  
Charged to byde under the great judgement.  
That King Robert acted in his Parliament.  
Thereof I make no longer continuance,  
But Wallace end in world was displeasance ;  
Thereof I cease; and put not into ryme,  
Scotland may think the blessed happy tyme.  
That he was born, by principal points two,  
This is the first ere that we farther go :  
Scotland he fred, and broughte it from thirlage,  
And now in Heaven he hath his harborage,  
Whereof we have right stedfast confidence,  
Since of his Country he made so great defence.

AN ADMONITION TO THE  
R E A D E R.

These things which follow,avouring of the superstitious credulity of the people, and deceiptfull counseadge of the Monks of these times, we have notwithstanding infert, lest we should seem at our own band rashly to omit any thing which we found in our coppy: to the end, that they may admonish us to study to be thankfull to our blessed Lord, who hath now opened our eyes to see through the mist wherewith these former ages were blinded.

A Monk there was in Burie Abbay than,  
A Into that tyme a right religioun man:  
young man als with him in Order stood,  
Who knew his life was clean, perfect and good;  
his Father Monk was vised with sickness,  
out of the world as he should pass on case,  
his brother saw his sprye likely to pals,  
band of him right earnestly could he ask,  
to come again, and shew him of the meed,  
that he should ask of God for his good deed,  
he granted him at his power to prieve,  
to come agen, if God will give him leave.  
his sprye changed out of this worlds pain,  
at that same time came to the Monk again.

Such thing hath been, as is by voice and sight,  
 Where he appeared there shined meikle light,  
 Like to lanterns they illuminate so clear,  
 That worldly wight thereto might be no pear,  
 A voice thus said : God hath me granted grace,  
 That I shal keep my promise in this place.

The Monk was blyth of this clean figure fair :  
 But a firebrand in his forehead he bare,  
 As that him thought mislyked all the lave.

Where art thou sprite? answered : So God me save  
 In Purgatory. How long shalt thou bide there  
 But half a year to come, and little mair.

Purgatory is, I let thee well to wit ,  
 In any place where God will it commit :  
 An hours space I was there judged to be,  
 And that passeth, suppose I speak with thee.  
 Why hast thou that, and all the rest so whole ,  
 For in science, I thought me most avail :  
 Who prides therein, their labour is in waste:  
 For science comes but of the holy Ghast.

After thine hour, where is thy passage even ?  
 When time comes, he said, to lasting heaven,  
 What time is that, I pray you now declare ?  
 Two are on life must be before me there.

Which two are they, the verity me ken ?  
 The first hath been a great slayer of men,  
 Now they him keep to martyr in London town,  
 On wednesday before the King and common :  
 Is none in lyfe that hath so many slain.

O brother, he said, this tale is but in vain,  
 For slaughter is to God abominable.  
 Then said the sprite ; Forsooth this is no fable,

He is *Wallace*, defender of *Scotland*,  
 For righteous war that he took upon hand.  
 Righteouness there is loved over the lave,  
 Therefore in heaven he shal that honour have :  
 Syn a poor Priest is meikle to commend,  
 He took in thanks what thing that God him send,  
 For godliness and good devotion,  
 Heaven he shal have to lasting warisom.

I am the third granted through Gods grace.  
 Brother, he said, tell I this in our place,  
 They will but deem I either dream or rave.

Then said the sprite: This witness thou shalt have;  
 The bels shal ring for ought that ye do may,  
 When they him slay, half an hore of the day.  
 And so they did, the *Monk* wost what they ailed.  
 Throgh broad *Britain* the word thereof was scail-  
 The sprite took leave at Gods will to be. (ed.  
 Of *VWallace* end to hear is great pitie.

And I will not put men in great dolour,  
 But lightly pass out over this fatal hour.  
 On wednesday fierce *Sutherland* forth him brought  
 To martyre him as they before had thought.

*Wallace* was martyrd, the truth to you to tell,  
 As were *Osweld*, *Edmond*, *Edward* with pain full:  
 With men of arms led him a ful great rout,  
 With a bold sprite then *Wallace* blent about :  
 A Priest he asked; for him that died on tree a  
 King *Edward* then commanded his Clergie,  
 And said, I charge in pain of losse of life,  
 None be so boldy on tyrant for to shife,  
 He hath long rung in contrare of mine hienesse;  
 ble sted Bishop soon present in that place,

Of Canterbury he then was righteous Lord,  
 Against the King he made his right record,  
 And said : My self shal hear his confession,  
 If I have myght, in contrare of thy Crown,  
 Or thou through force shal stop me from this thing  
 I vow to God which is my righteous King,  
 Over all England I shal thee interdite,  
 And make it known thou art an heretick :  
 The Sacrement of Kirk I shal him give,  
 Then take thy choise, to starve or let me live :  
 It were more vail in worship of thy Crown,  
 To keep such one in lyfe in thy bandour,  
 Then all the land and good that thou hast reft,  
 But covetise thee ay from honour drefc :  
 Thou hast thy life rung long in wrongous deed,  
 That shal be seen on thee, or on thy seed.  
 The King gave charge they shold the Bishop to  
 But wise Lords counselled to let him ga :  
 All wise men said, that his desire was right,  
 To Wallace then he railed in their sight,  
 And sadly heard his confession to the end,  
 Humbly to God his sprite he did commend :  
 Lawty him served with hearty devotion.  
 Upon his knees, and said an Orison :  
 His leave he took, and to Westminster rode :  
 The Cleughmen there they bare Wallace bry body  
 Unto a place his martyrdom to take,  
 For to his death he willed them suffering make,  
 From the first night he was tane in Scotland,  
 They keepeed him into the famine band :  
 Nothing he had that would have done him good  
 But Englishmen him serued of carefull food,

I 2. The worldly lyfe desires the sustenance,  
Though he it got in contrare of pleasance.  
These thirty dayes his bands they durst not flak,  
While he was bound to a scamyle of aik,  
With yron chains that were both stark and keen.  
A Clerk they set to hear what he would mean.

Thou *Scor*, he said, that so great wrong hath done,  
Thy fatal hour thou sees approacheth soon,  
Thou should in mind remember thy misdeed,  
That Clerks may when they the Psalms read,  
For Christen souls which oft makes them to pray,  
In their number thou may be one of thay,

For now thou sees on force thou must decease.

Then *Wallace* said : For all thy round rehearse,  
Thou hast no charge, suppose I had done miss,  
Yon blessed Bishop hath heght I shal have bliss,  
And I row wel that God shal it admit,  
Thy simulate words shal not my conscience smit ;  
Comfort I have of way that I should gang,  
Most pain I feel that I byde here so lang.

Then said the Clerk : Our King sent oft thee tilly,  
Thou might have had all Scotland at thy will,  
So hold of him, and ceased of thy stryfe,  
So as a Lord to reign through all thy lyfe.

Then *Wallace* said : Thou speaks of mighty thing;  
Had I lasted, and got my righteous King,  
And worthy *Bruce* received had his Crown,  
thought have made *England* at his bandoun,  
That utterly it shuld been at his will,

What pleased him to save, or else to spill.

Well, said the Clerk, I see thou repente nought,  
Of wickedness thou hast a felon thought,

Is none in world that hath so many slain, (but  
 Therefore to ask, me think, thou should  
 Grace at our King, and then at his barnage.  
 Then *Wallace* smiled a little at his language,  
 I grant, he said, some *Englishmen* I slew,  
 In my quarrel, me thought not half anew :  
 I moved no war but for to win our own,  
 Both God and man the right full well hath know  
 Thy frustrate words doth dought but tyres me,  
 I thee command, in Gods name, let me be,  
 A Sheriff gart this Clerk soon from him pass,  
 Right as they durst, granted what he would ask.  
 A Psalter booke *Wallace* on him had ever  
 From his child-hood, with it he would not sever  
 The better he crowed in his voyage to speed :  
 But when he was dispoyled of his weed,  
 This grace he asked at Lord *Clifford* that Knight  
 To let him have the Psalter book in sight :  
 He gart a Priest open before him hold,  
 while they to him had done what that they wold  
 Stedfast he red fer ought they did him there.  
 Feil *Sutherland* said, that *Wallace* felt no fair,  
 Good devotion so was his beginning,  
 Continued therewith, and so was his ending,  
 While speech and sprite at once all can fare,  
 To lasting bliss we trust for evermair.  
 I will not tell how he devided was  
 In five parts, and ordained for to pass,  
 Yet his sprite thus by likeliness was well :  
 Of *Wallace* lyfe who hath a better feel,  
 May show forth more with wit and eloquence :  
 For I go this have done my diligence,

After the prose given from the Latine book,  
Which Master *Blair* in his time undertook,  
In fair Latine complied to the end,  
With good witness, which more is to commend.  
Bishop *Sinkler* that Lord was of *Dunkel*,  
He got this book, and confirmed to himself :  
For very truth thereof he had no dread,  
Himself had heard great part of *VWallace* deed.  
His purpose was to have sent it to *Rome*,  
Our Father of Kirk therein to give his doom.  
But Master *Blair*, and als Sir *Thomas Gray*,  
After *Wallace* they lived many a day.  
These two knew best of Sir *Williams* deed,  
From sixteen year and nine and twenty yeed.  
Fourty and five *Wallace* of age was call'd,  
That time that he was to the *Sutheron* fald :  
Though this matter be noughe to all pleasance,  
His toothfast deed is worthy to advance.  
All worthy men that reads this rural dyte,  
Blame not this Book, though I be imperfise :  
I should have thanks, since I no travel spar'd ;  
For my travel no man heght me reward,  
Nor charge I had of King, nor other Lord :  
Great harm I thought this good deed should be  
I have said here near as the proce's goes, (imord.  
And feigned not for friends, nor yet for foes.  
For cost hereof was no man bound to me,  
In this sentence I had no will to see;  
Put in as much as I rehearsed noughe  
So worthily as noble *Wallace* wrought.  
But in one point I grant I said amisse:  
These two Knights should blamed be of this,

The Knight Wallace of Craigie righteous Lord,  
 And Liddaill too, caused me make wrong record  
 On Allartoun mure, the Crown he took one day  
 To get battel, as mine Author wil say ;  
 These two caus'd me say on another wise,  
 To Master Blair we did part of suprise,

## F I N I S.

Thus endeth William Wallace wight,  
 Behinde him left not such a Knight,  
 Of worthinesse, and deed of hand,  
 From thraldom thrice he fred this Land.

The Conclusion of this  
B O O K.

G O, nable Book, fulfilled  
of sentence,  
Suppose thou be barren of E-  
loquence.

Go, worthy Book, fulfilled of  
worthy deed,  
But thee to help of Language  
thou hast need;

When good Makers rang wel  
into SCOTLAND,  
Great harm it was that none  
of them thee fand.

Yet there is part that can thee  
well advance,

Now

Now bid the time, and be i  
remembrance.

I you beseech of your bene  
volence,

Who vwill not love, lack not  
mine Eloquence.

It is vwell known I am a Rural  
man,

And here have done as good  
ly as I can :

My tongue did never ornate  
tearms embrace,

I beseech God, that giver is of  
grace,

Made hel and earth, and set the  
heaven above,

That he till us grant his dear  
lasting love.

EPI

# EPITAPHIUM Gulielmi Wallace.

**I**nvida mors tristi Gulielmum funere Val-  
Quæ cuncta tollit sustulit. (lam,  
Et tanto procive, cinis : pro finibus urna est:  
Frigusque pro lorica obit,  
Ille quidem terras, loca se inferiora, reliquit,  
At fata factis suppressimens,  
Parte sui meliore solum, Cælumque pererrat,  
Hoc, spiritu, illud gloria.  
At tibi si inscriptum generoso pectus honesto  
Fuisset, hostis proditi  
Artibus Angle tuis, in pœnas parcior isses;  
Nec oppidatim spargeres  
Membra viri sacranda adytis. Sed scin quid in  
Immanitate viceris ? lista  
Ut vallæ in cunctas oras spargantur & horas  
Laudes ; thumque dedecus.

FINIS.





